

I'm So Glad You Asked!



**Dr. Max D. Younce
Answers Your
Questions On The Bible**

Volume I

Copyright © 2010
ALL RIGHTS RESERVED

No portion of this publication may be reproduced, stored in any electronic system, or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic, mechanical, photocopy, recording, or otherwise, without written permission from the author. Brief quotations may be used in literary reviews.

Unless otherwise indicated, all Scripture quotations are taken from the King James Translation of the Bible.

Library of Congress Control Number: 2010913162

ISBN-13: 978-0-9815225-9-3

First Printing: 2010

HERITAGE BAPTIST BIBLE CHURCH

P.O. Box 573

Walnut Grove, MN 56180

Dr. Max D. Younce, Pastor

Web: www.heritagebbc.com

Printed in the USA By

Morris Publishing

3212 E. Hwy. 30

Kearney, NE 68847

800-650-7888

Table of Contents

WHAT THIS BOOK IS ABOUT.....	9
Bible Questions & Answers	9
www.heritagebbc.com.....	9
I. ADAM AND EVE	10
1. Why Did Adam and Eve Cover Themselves With Fig Leaves?	10
II. ALCOHOL	12
1. Did Jesus Make Alcoholic Wine?.....	12
2. Were The Apostles Drunk on Wine at Pentecost?.....	13
III. ANIMALS	14
1. Do Animals Have a Spirit.....	14
IV. BIBLE CHRONOLOGY	15
1. Was There Time for Judah's Grandchildren?	15
V. BIBLE TRANSLATIONS & STUDY BIBLES	17
1. Is The New International Version a Good Bible to Use?.....	17
2. Why Do The Apocrypha Only Appear In Catholic Bibles?	17
Part One, The Background:	18
Part Two: The Reasons for the Apocrypha Being Rejected.	19
3. What is the Septuagint?	20
4. What Does Biblical Criticism Mean?	21
5. Is the Cuneiform Language Related to the Bible?	22
6. What Are The Targums, Talmud, and Midrash?	23
7. What Is the Masoretic Text?.....	24
8. Is the New World Translation the Only True Bible?	26
9. Is the New King James True To The Hebrew & Greek Texts?	27
10. Are the Sinai & Vatican the "Oldest and Best" Manuscripts?	32
11. Is the NIV Easier to Understand than the King James?	36
12. Did the Gospel Writers Copy From Each Other?	38
13a. The Ryrie Study Bible #1.	40
Introductory Statements and Mark 16:9-16	40
I. Mark 16:9-20.....	41
II. Bible Doctrines as Set Forth in Mark 16:9-20.....	45
Justification In God's Eyes." No Baptism Here!	52
Justification In Man's Eyes.	52
13b. The Ryrie Study Bible #2	52
<i>Conclusion of the Last Twelve Verses of Mark</i>	52
I. The Commission: If the "Signs" Are for Today; You Must Have Them All! ..	54
II. The Concern: The Purpose for the "Sign Miracles"	55
III. The Conclusion: The "Miracle Signs" Are Not for Today.	58
13c. The Ryrie Study Bible #3	61
<i>1 Corinthians 13:10</i>	61
A. The Contradiction.	62
B. The Contrast of the Gifts (1 Corinthians 13:8-13).	64

"Child To Adult"	69
"Mirror To Clear View"	70
"Shall Know As I Am Known"	71
13d. The Ryrie Study Bible #4.....	72
<i>James 2:14,19,24</i>	72
Section One: The "Two-Coupon Ticket to Heaven."	72
Section Two: James 2:19.....	81
13e. The Ryrie Study Bible #5	85
<i>Romans 8:1</i>	85
13f. The Ryrie Study Bible #6.....	88
<i>Isaiah 45:18</i>	88
VI. CATHOLICISM & LUTHERANISM.....	91
1. Did Christ Have Any Brothers or Sisters?	91
2. Can a Priest Change Bread & Wine to Christ's Body & Blood?.....	92
3. Was the Virgin Mary Sinless?	93
4. Where Is Lent Found in the Bible?	95
5. Can Men Forgive the Eternal Results of Sin?.....	96
6. Please Explain "And Call No Man Your Father..."	97
7. What About the Apostle's Creed?.....	102
8. Is There Any Scripture for the Office of the Priesthood Today?	103
9. Why Has My Lutheran Friend Never Heard of The Rapture?.....	110
10. Should We Pray for Someone After Their Death?	113
VII. CHURCH PROCEDURES.....	116
1. Is It Right to Use Real Wine for Communion?.....	116
2. Is the Celebration of Easter in the Bible?	117
3. What About Women Pastors?.....	118
4. Should We Practice Foot Washing Today?	119
1. Christ's Incarnation, Humility, and Resurrection.	120
2. Peter's Confusion About Fellowship. (John 13:5-8).	122
3. Christ Exposes Judas, the Counterfeit Christian, As He Teaches a Lesson of Discernment.	125
4. The Last Object Lesson Is Showing Christ's Finished Work as Revealed in John 13:12.	126
5. Conclusion: Should We Practice Foot Washing Today?	127
5. Questions About Who Should Take Communion.....	129
"I Traveled Down A Lonely Road"	131
VIII. CHRISTIAN WALK.....	132
1. Why Do We Have Trials and Testings?	132
2. Is Suicide the Unpardonable Sin?	133
3. A Note To Our Dear Readers:	134
4. Suicide Is Not the Answer!.....	135
5. Does Job 3:25 Mean Everything We Fear Will Come Upon Us?...	137
6. Is It Wrong To Have A Christmas Tree?	138
<i>Jeremiah 10:3,4</i>	138

7.	Please Explain "Whosoever Is Born of God Doth Not...Sin"	138
	<i>1 John 3:9</i>	138
8.	Should We Pray The Lord's Prayer Every Day?.....	139
9.	Bear Your Own Burden; Or, One Another's?	141
	<i>Galatians 6:2,5</i>	141
10.	Must We "Pursue Holiness" To Obtain Eternal Life?	142
	<i>Hebrews 12:14</i>	142
11.	Why Do Children Suffer?	143
	<i>Hebrews 13:5,6</i>	143
12.	Why Did Christ Say, "Turn the Other Cheek?"	144
	<i>Matthew 5:39</i>	144
13.	Is Forgiveness Without Trust Really Forgiveness?	145
14.	Can the Soul and Spirit Be Separated?	147
15.	Do You Have To Turn From Your Sin To Be Saved?.....	148
	<i>Ezekiel 18:21-23</i>	148
16.	What Does "Whosoever shall save his life shall lose it, " Mean?...	149
17.	Is It a Sin to Play Cards on Sunday?.....	150
18.	How Can I Know God's Will?	152
19.	What Does the Bible Say About Men Wearing Earrings?.....	153
20.	What Does The Bible Say About Men Wearing Earrings?.....	155
	<i>Asked The Second Time</i>	155
21.	Does Galatians 5:17 Say Christians Can't Help But Sin?	157
22.	Is There Such A Thing As Sinless Perfection?	158
23.	Does God Really Care If We Give To His Work; Or Not?	160
IX.	CONTRADICTIONS, "SO-CALLED"	168
1.	How Many Blind Men Were Healed	168
	<i>Matthew 20:29-34 Vs. Mark 10:45-52</i>	168
2.	Where Is This Written by Jeremiah?	169
	<i>Matthew 27:9</i>	169
3.	Why Doesn't God Know the Day & the Hour?.....	169
	<i>Mark 13:32</i>	169
4.	How Many Died In the Plague?.....	170
	<i>1 Corinthians 10:8 Vs. Numbers 25:1-9</i>	170
5.	Judas and The 30 Pieces of Silver	170
	<i>Acts 1:18 Vs. Matthew 27:5</i>	170
6.	What Did David Actually Pay for the Threshing Floor?	171
	<i>1 Chronicles 21:25 Vs. 2 Samuel 24:24</i>	171
7.	Was Moses' Father-in-law's Name Jethro, or Reuel?.....	172
8.	Is There A Contradiction In the Size of David's Army?	173
	<i>1 Chronicles 21:5 Vs. 2 Samuel 24:9</i>	173
9.	Did Israel Serve the Egyptians 400 Years, Or 430 Years?	174
	<i>Genesis 15:13 Vs. Exodus 12:</i>	174
10.	Did They "Hear" or "Hear Not?"	175
	<i>Acts 9:7 Vs. Acts 22:9</i>	175

11. Did The Levites Begin to Serve at Age 25 or 30?	176
<i>Numbers 4:3 Vs. Numbers 8:24</i>	176
12. David & Michal Had No Children. Who Fathered Her 5 Sons?.....	177
13. Was the King of Gath's Name, Abimelech or Achish?.....	177
14. "God Tempts No Man" Vs. "Lead Us Not Into Temptation."	178
15. Why Do the Books of James & Romans Seem to Disagree?.....	179
<i>James, Chapter 2 Vs. Romans, Chapter 4</i>	179
16. The Christian's "Two Rests"	181
Peace With God & The Peace of God.....	182
17. Is There A Contradiction Between Acts 2:38 & John 3:16?.....	182
<i>Or, Does Baptism Save?</i>	182
18. Did Paul Know Christ, and Then Not Know Him?	184
<i>2 Corinthians 5:16</i>	184
19. Was Crispus, Or Sosthenes, the Ruler Of the Synagogue?.....	186
<i>Acts 18:8,17</i>	186
20. Explain The Discrepancy In John 19:14,16 & Mark 15:25	188
21. A So-Called Contradiction Found on the Road to Emmaus.	189
<i>Luke 24:21</i>	189
X. CREATION	193
1. What Was The Original Creation; Or How Old Is The Earth?	193
2. What Does "From The Beginning" Mean?	195
<i>Matthew 19:4 Vs. Mark 10:6</i>	195
3. Created vs. Made	196
<i>Exodus 20:11a</i>	196
4. Where Did Cain Get His Wife?	198
5. Questions About the Flood and the Age of the Earth	199
XI. CROSS-LESS GOSPEL.....	205
1. The "Cross-less" Gospel.....	205
XII. DIFFICULT SCRIPTURES.....	212
1. Did God Create Evil?.....	212
<i>Isaiah 45:7</i>	212
2. What Is The Unpardonable Sin?.....	212
3. What Was "Joseph's Coat of Many Colors" Really Like?	214
4. They that Take the Sword Shall Perish With The Sword?.....	214
<i>Matthew 26:52</i>	214
5. What About the Short Bed in Isaiah 28:20?	215
6. Will You Go To Hell For Calling Someone A Fool?	217
<i>Matthew 5:21, 22</i>	217
7. Who Are the "Overcomers" in Revelation 2:17?.....	218
8. Who Is Shiloh Who Washes His Garments In Wine?.....	220
<i>Genesis 49:10-12</i>	220
9. Seven Women to One Man?	224
<i>Isaiah 4:1</i>	224
XIII. DOCTRINE.....	226

1.	Do I Have To "Come Forward " In Church To Be Saved?	226
2.	Will Hitler Be In Heaven At The "Times Of Restitution?"	230
	<i>Acts 3:19-21</i>	230
3.	“...My God, my God, why hast thou forsaken me?”	235
4.	Please Explain "Give Not That...Is Holy Unto the Dogs..."	240
	<i>Matthew 7:6</i>	240
XIV.	ETERNAL SECURITY.....	244
1.	Is It Impossible for Those Who "Fall Away" to Be Saved?.....	244
	<i>Hebrews 6:4-6</i>	244
2.	Does Romans 11:20,21 Mean You Can Lose Your Salvation?	245
XV.	GOD, THE FATHER.....	248
1.	Are There Lies in the Bible?.....	248
2.	Is There Anything God Cannot Do?	249
3.	Is God a Respector of Persons?.....	249
	<i>Galatians 3:28</i>	249
4.	Is God Truly A Righteous Judge?.....	250
5.	Does God Chasten Christians Because He Hates Them?	252
XVI.	HEAVEN	256
1.	Did the Old Testament Saints Go to Heaven?	256
2.	Will We Be Angels in Heaven?.....	257
	<i>Matthew 22:28,30</i>	257
3.	Will We Have a New Name in Heaven?	259
	<i>Revelation 2:17</i>	259
XVII.	HELL.....	264
1.	Is It Dark in Hell?	264
XVIII.	HOMOSEXUALITY	266
1.	Did God Create Homosexuals?.....	266
XIX.	INFANT BAPTISM	269
1.	Does Acts 16:31,33 Mean Babies Are to Be Baptized?.....	269
	A. Origin of Infant Baptism:.....	269
XX.	ISRAEL	272
1.	Why Didn't The Israelites Eat the Herds They Had With Them? ...	272
2.	When Will There Be Peace in Israel?- Part 1	273
3.	When Will There Be Peace In Israel? - Part 2	274
	<i>To Whom Did God Give The Land of Canaan?</i>	274
4.	When Will There Be Peace in Israel? - Part 3	275
5.	Will There Be Peace In Israel?- Part 4.....	277
6.	Israel's False Peace And Destruction - Part 5.....	278
7.	When Will There Be Peace In Israel - Part 6.....	279
	<i>God's Promises To Israel Fulfilled</i>	279
8.	Will There Be Peace in Israel? - Conclusion	281
9.	Is Present Israel Back In The Land To Stay?.....	282
XXI.	JESUS CHRIST	287

1.	Is Melchisedec Jesus Christ in the Old Testament?	287
	<i>Hebrews 7:1,3</i>	287
2.	Was Christ Born In December?	288
3.	Why Two Accounts for the Nativity?	289
4.	Was Jesus Christ Just a Good Man?	290
5.	"The Sceptre Shall Not Depart From Judah" Means What?	292
	<i>Genesis 49:10</i>	292
6.	Why Does the Bible Give 2 Different Genealogies for Christ?	293
7.	Where Did Christ Go When He Died	294
8.	What Is Jesus' Name?	295
XXII.	OTHER BOOKS BY AUTHOR	297
	How to Order Books.....	298
XXIII.	ABOUT THE AUTHOR	299

What This Book Is About

This book is a collection of most of the Question & Answer articles found on our web site. These articles were originally published as brief, weekly columns in a local newspaper.

Due to the number of questions, we had to publish the book in two volumes. The link is found below. Some are short; some are quite lengthy. The shorter articles are concise answers to questions; but, questions about Bible Doctrine and issues of the day, require more lengthy answers.

They are real questions, asked by real people; both young and old. Sometimes a different question is asked on the same topic.

All are written by Dr. Max D. Younce.

"Study to shew thyself approved unto God, a workman that needeth not to be ashamed, rightly dividing the word of truth. - 2 Timothy 2:15

"Till I come, give attendance to reading, to exhortation, to doctrine." 1 Timothy 4:13

Bible Questions & Answers
www.heritagebbc.com

I. Adam and Eve

1. *Why Did Adam and Eve Cover Themselves With Fig Leaves?*

Question: Why did Adam and Eve cover themselves with fig leaves? Was the minute Adam and Eve ate of the fruit of the Tree of Life the first time sin came into the World?

Answer: The Bible doesn't tell us why Adam and Eve only made "aprons" (Genesis 3:7); but they didn't do the job of covering nakedness! God had to shed the blood of animals to make coats of skin for them. The "aprons" represented man's efforts to cover their sin, or self-righteousness. The fig leaves didn't do the job there, either.

When God made the coats of skin, He laid down a principle,

"...without the shedding of blood there is no remission (of sin)." - Hebrews 9:22b

The innocent victims, the animals, had to die to make the covering for sin. The animals were sacrificed, they had no part in the disobedience. Adam and Eve accepted the sacrifice and wore the coverings. This was the beginning of sacrifices to "cover" sin until the perfect Lamb of God, our Savior, the Lord Jesus Christ came to die as the perfect substitute "which taketh away the sins of the world." (John 1:29).

When Adam and Eve ate of the forbidden fruit, sin came into the perfect world God had created for them, by the entrance of a sin nature, passed on through Adam and Eve to the *whole human race*. We find that *"...death passed upon all men."* (Romans 5:12b).

Adam and Eve began to die physically; and they died spiritually, until they accepted God's sacrifice for them. Spiritual death passed on to all humanity. Now, as the Bible says, *"...all have sinned."* (Romans 5:12c). The sin spoken of here is our sin nature inherited from Adam and Eve. All mankind is born with a sin nature; and, until they receive Jesus Christ as their Savior,

I. Adam & Eve

they are separated from God and "...*dead in trespasses and sins.*" (Ephesians 2:1) We are not sinners because we sin; but, we sin because we are born sinners.

The Bible says that sin was already in the universe. Who met Eve in the Garden of Eden? (Genesis 3:1) It was Satan, of course! Already operating in his malicious character. He had already fallen from his exalted position of anointed cherub, and as "Lucifer, son of the morning." (Isaiah 14:12 and Ezekiel 28:14,15). He had already influenced a third of the angels to follow him. (Revelation 12:3,4). The Bible states the angels were created *before* God laid "*the foundation of the earth.*" (Job 38:4-7). The "*sons of God*" referred to here are the angels.

Satan thought he would ruin God's perfect plan; but, he is no match for God! God knew we would need a Savior and foreordained Him "before the foundation of the world..." (1 Peter 1:18-20). I hope you have trusted Him as *your* Savior.

II. Alcohol

1. *Did Jesus Make Alcoholic Wine?*

Question: In John, Chapter 2, where Jesus turned the water into wine; was this intoxicating wine?

Answer: The answer is, "No," and here are the facts. The Greek word for "wine" here is "oinos." It is a GENERIC word which includes all kinds of wine and all stages of the juice of the grape, sometimes the clusters, and even the vine. The word itself, therefore, cannot give us the answer.

In Proverbs 20:1 we are told that,

"Wine is a mocker, strong drink is raging: and whosoever is deceived thereby is not wise."

Would it not be derogatory to the character of Christ to suppose that He exerted His miraculous power to produce 60 gallons of intoxicating wine? Wine which the Bible had denounced as "*a mocker*" (Proverbs 20:1); "*biteth like a serpent,*" and "*stingeth like an adder*" (Proverbs 23:32); as the "*poison of dragons and the cruel venom of asps*" (Deuteronomy 32:33); and which the Holy Spirit had selected as the emblem of God's wrath (Revelation 16:19).

Another fact is that alcohol does not occur naturally in any product of nature; was never created by God; but is essentially an artificial thing prepared by man through the destructive process of fermentation. A man who visited Palestine 130 years ago researching Bible wines quoted the following: "All who know of the wines then used, well understand the unfermented juice of the grape. The present wines of Jerusalem and Lebanon, as we tasted them, were commonly boiled and sweet, without intoxicating qualities, such as we here get in liquors called wines. The boiling prevents fermentation. Those were esteemed the best wines which were least strong."

This event, the Wedding at Cana, furnishes no sanction for the use of alcoholic beverages today.

II. Alcohol

2. *Were The Apostles Drunk on Wine at Pentecost?*

Question: Can you explain how in Acts 2, when those spoke and everyone understood in their own language, how they could be accused of being drunk on "new wine"?

Answer: The "new wine" spoken of here is the Greek "gleukos." Our Lexicon renders it "new, unfermented wine, from "glukus," sweet, agreeable to the taste." This is the only place this word appears in the Greek New Testament.

Three improbabilities: First, that these mockers would think that getting drunk would enable one to speak about 15 different languages instantly, without years of study abroad. Second, to think that "new wine" (gleukos), unfermented, would cause drunkenness. Third, Peter reminds them it is the third hour, Jewish time, (being 9 a.m. Roman time, the same as ours). This was the hour of the morning sacrifice and it was not usual for men to be drunk at this time. 1 Thessalonians 5:7 says, "...and they that be drunken are drunken in the night."

For these mockers to make such a statement, they were probably alcoholics themselves. These, no doubt, used the Feast of Pentecost just as some use Christmas as an excuse to "celebrate" and get drunk. These men are proof that Proverbs 20:1 is true.

"Wine is a MOCKER, strong drink is raging: and whosoever is deceived thereby is not wise."

Wine had perverted their thinking so much they even thought "new wine" (unfermented) would make a person drunk. That's what alcohol will do to your mind.

III. Animals

1. *Do Animals Have a Spirit*

Question: Do animals have a soul and spirit like we do?

Answer: The Word of God lets us know that animals have a soul, but not a spirit. The soul is the seat of the emotions and appetites, whereas the spirit is the seat of one's intelligence. 1 Corinthians 2:11 states,

"For what man knoweth the things of a man, save the SPIRIT of man, which is in him?"

In Job 32:8 we are told,

"But there is a SPIRIT in man: and the inspiration of the Almighty giveth them UNDERSTANDING."

Now, notice Psalm 32:9,

"Be ye not as the horse, or as the mule, which have NO UNDERSTANDING (i.e. no spirit): whose mouth must be held in with bit and bridle..."

Animals act on their emotions and appetites by instinct. Upon death, the body and soul of an animal cease to exist. By this I do not mean that animals have no value, and we should not be considerate of them. To the contrary, since this life is all an animal has, God wants us to be kind to animals. Proverbs 12:10 tells us, "A righteous man regardeth the life of his beast."

God wanted mankind to live eternally so He could have fellowship with thinking beings. Man's sin made that impossible, separating us from God. Therefore, Jesus Christ came to this Earth, died on the Cross and was resurrected to pay for our sins. Death for an animal is the end. Death of a person is just the beginning of their eternal life, either in Heaven or in Hell.

"Verily, verily, I say unto you, He that heareth my word, and BELIEVETH on him that sent me, hath EVERLASTING LIFE, and shall not come into condemnation (Hell); but is passed from death unto life."- John 5:24

IV. Bible Chronology

1. *Was There Time for Judah's Grandchildren?*

Question: An atheist I know does not believe there is time for Judah to produce all his descendants given in Genesis 38 and 46 during the time that Joseph was sold into slavery in Egypt and was reunited with his brothers and father, Jacob.

Answer: Your atheist friend is wrong! There is time enough. Let me explain that Judah and Joseph are two of the twelve sons born to Jacob by his 4 wives: Leah, Rachel, and Bilhah and Zilpah, their handmaids. At the end of the first seven years of their marriage, we find Jacob's wife, Leah, had born him six sons and a daughter. (Genesis 30:20,21). Judah was the fourth in birth order.

Judah would have been about 3 years old when Jacob's eleventh son, Joseph, was born at the end of the seven years. Judah would have been approximately 20 years old when he and his brothers sold Joseph to the Ishmaelites at age 17, and, approximately 42 years old when Jacob and his sons and their families went down to Egypt to reunite with Joseph after 22 years there.

Scripture tells us that Joseph was 30 when he became Pharaoh's "second in command." (Genesis 41:46). We add the 7 years of plenty (Genesis 41:53,43) and 2 years of famine (Genesis 45:10,11), making Joseph 39 years old when the family gets together. We subtract Joseph's age of 17 when he went to Egypt (Genesis 37:2) from 39 and arrive at 22 years in Egypt.

Let us briefly recap the events of Genesis 38. Judah marries a Canaanite wife. Er, his firstborn, marries Tamar; but is wicked and is slain by the Lord. (Genesis 38:6,7). His second son was slain by the Lord for refusing to raise up seed to his brother with Tamar. (Genesis 38:9,10). Judah then sends Tamar to her father's house and tells her to remain a widow. Tamar believes Judah is withholding the third son; and deceives Judah by impersonating a prostitute; and he conceives two more sons by her, Pharez and

VI. Bible Chronology

Zarah. (Genesis 38:25-30). Pharez is listed as having 2 sons in Genesis 46:12, making Judah a grandfather.

We know that Jacob's sons married at a fairly young age, as they all had families when they went to Egypt; and two, Judah and Asher, had 2 grandchildren apiece. (Genesis 46:5-27).

The problem is not that Judah could not have had 2 grandchildren when he went down to Egypt; but, that your friend does not believe God's Word.

"The entrance of thy words giveth light; it giveth understanding to the simple." - Psalm 119:130

"Study to shew thyself approved unto God, a workman that needeth not to be ashamed, rightly dividing the word of truth." - 2 Timothy 2:15

V. Bible Translations & Study Bibles

1. *Is The New International Version a Good Bible to Use?*

Question: Is the New International Version (NIV) a good Bible to use?

Answer: It is probably one of the poorest imitations of the Bible on the market today! The NIV has about 64,000 words missing from the Majority Text. Here are a few of the many verses they removed: Matthew 17:21; 18:11; 23:14; Mark 15:28; 11:26; 9:44; 9:46; Luke 23:17; John 5:4; Acts 8:37; 24:7; Romans 16:24.

Many times they failed to translate the Hebrew or Greek words; so, unless you know Hebrew or Greek, you would have no idea what you are reading. For example: Check Genesis 6:4 where the Hebrew word "nephilim" appears. Or refer to Matthew 16:18; Revelation 1:18; 6:8; 20:13; 20:14 where the Greek word "Hades" appears.

The best translation we have is the King James Translation of 1611, bringing the Hebrew, Greek, and Aramaic into the English. The KJT has a Fifth Grade reading level, whereas the NIV has an Eighth Grade level. In the KJV about 95% of the words are one and two syllable. To copyright the NIV and avoid plagiarism, they had to change, add to, and omit many words and verses. They want your money, not the word of God!

"Every word of God is pure:...Add thou not unto his words, lest he reprove thee, and thou be found a liar." - Proverbs 36:5,6

It is best to heed the advice found in Acts 16:31,

"Believe on the Lord Jesus Christ, and thou shalt be saved."

2. *Why Do The Apocrypha Only Appear In Catholic Bibles?*

Question: Why do the 14 Apocryphal books only appear in the Roman Catholic Bible, and not in other Bibles. I am seriously interested.

V. *Bible Translations & Study Bibles*

Answer:

Part One, The Background:

1. “Apocrypha” - A neuter plural noun, means “something hidden, secret, or concealed.” It refers to the works which were written for an inner circle of people, sometimes a heretical sect. Therefore, it had the force of secret, mysterious occult. In this sense, the word is practically the same as “esoteric”; or, for the initiated alone—a term of dignity and respect, in their eyes.

A. It was used by early Christian writers to denote a class of writings now called “Apocalyptic”; rather than the class now known as Apocrypha.

B. From the thought of concealment, connected with darkness, came the second meaning, i.e., spurious, forged, of unknown or fraudulent authorship of contents, heretical.

C. In the Fourth Century A.D., and possibly by Jerome himself, the word came to be used in the sense of “un-canonical, unrecognized,” and to be applied to those religious books which were inferior in authority and unworthy to be in inspired Scripture.

The great Reformation had shaken Europe. Luther had translated the Scriptures into German and had confirmed that only the Hebrew Canon of the Old Testament should be acknowledged as authoritative, which excluded the Apocrypha.

The Roman Catholic Church knew that something had to be done to offset the Lutherans. It was settled at the Council of Trent held in 1546. After a prolonged and highly controversial session, the decree was passed that:

1. The 14 Apocryphal books were included in the canon,
2. That unwritten traditions are of God and to be received as the Word of God. Should anyone reject these decrees, “Let him be Anathema!” (i.e., accursed.)

It should be noted that at this council, there were only 53 prelates present. Not one was a German. Not one was a scholar distinguished for historical learning. Not one had made any

V. Bible Translations & Study Bibles

special study of the subject from the standpoint of antiquity. This council was responsible for the Apocrypha being in the Roman Catholic Bible.

Part Two: The Reasons for the Apocrypha Being Rejected.

There are myriads of reasons for the rejection of the apocryphal books. Due to space, we will list only ten.

1. They were never quoted in the New Testament by Christ, the Apostles, or any New Testament writer, even though they were in existence at that time.

2. Josephus, the great Jewish historian, expressly excludes them.

3. Philo, the great Jewish philosopher of Alexandria (20 B.C. to 50 A.D.) wrote prolifically and quoted largely from the Old Testament; yet never quoted from the Apocrypha, nor even mentioned them.

4. They are not found in any catalogue of canonical books made during the first four centuries.

5. Divine inspiration and authority is not claimed by any of the writers of the Apocrypha, and is definitely disclaimed by some of them.

6. The books contain many historical, geographical, and chronological errors, and distortions of Old Testament narratives; contradicting themselves, the Bible, and secular history.

7. The books were written much later than those of the Old Testament, long after its canon was closed.

8. Gregory the Great, Bishop of Rome (590 to 604 A.D.), and other distinguished men from the Fourth Century held to the Hebrew Scriptures and opposed the Apocrypha.

9. All the 14 apocryphal books exist in the Greek language, not the Hebrew, as do the Old Testament books.

10. The Jews in all parts of the world accept the same Canon or Hebrew Bible without variation. No apocryphal book ever found its way into the Jewish Canon.

V. Bible Translations & Study Bibles

Conclusion: The Hebrew Old Testament, Bible, had been recognized as complete before 400 B.C. Neither Christ, Himself; or the Apostles, or any New Testament writers ever acknowledged any of the 14 apocryphal books as part of the Old Testament.

3. What is the Septuagint?

Question: Do you have any information on the Septuagint translation of the Bible?

Answer: "Septuagint" is from the Latin, meaning "seventy." There were really 72 translators; i.e., six from each of the twelve tribes of Israel. They translated the Old Testament from Hebrew into Greek for the Greek-speaking Jews of Alexandria, Egypt, and surrounding areas. The abbreviation for "Septuagint" is LXX.

Shortly after the destruction of Jerusalem by Nebuchadnezzar in 586 B.C., Jews emigrated to Egypt (Jeremiah 43:5-7; 44:1). Later came Alexander the Great, who conquered Phoenicia, Palestine, and Egypt, founding the great city of Alexandria. He was impressed with the intelligence of the Jews in Palestine and showed them his kindness; causing many to accompany him into Egypt, settling in and around Alexandria. They were admitted into full citizenship and became valuable citizens.

Alexander's aim was to conquer the world and make it Greek in language and civilization. After his premature death in 323 B.C., his kingdom was divided into a line of kings called Ptolemy's. Ptolemy I brought thousands of Jews from Jerusalem to Alexandria, giving them religious freedom, full citizenship rights, and many other favors. He founded the famous Alexandrian Library, the greatest of the ancient world; also, a museum and a college.

By this time, Greek had become the common language in Egypt and the East. It had become impossible for the Jews to

V. Bible Translations & Study Bibles

maintain their social and business standings in Egypt and still retain their Semitic speech. Just as they had dropped the Hebrew and adopted the Aramaic; so now they adopted the Greek. Therefore, the need for a translation of Old Testament Scriptures into the Greek; thus, the Septuagint.

4. *What Does Biblical Criticism Mean?*

Question: What does Biblical Criticism mean? Is it describing atheists and agnostics who deny the Bible as the Word of God?

Answer: In a secular sense, it may be thought of that way; but, as applied biblically, it is not. Biblical Criticism is the science which seeks, by careful and detailed inquiry, to secure the exact words of the original manuscripts of the Bible. There are two branches:

A. Historical Criticism. This seeks to determine the age (date), authorship, composition, sources, character, and historical value of the documents, as judged by internal evidence. It does not hesitate to use the sciences of History, Geography, Ethnology, and Archeology. This is known as higher criticism.

B. Textual Criticism. This seeks to determine the exact and correct text of the Scriptures as it existed in the original documents, when freed from errors, corruptions and variations which have come into it during the long process of copying and recopying. This is called lower criticism.

C. Canon. This word also has reference to our line of thinking. Canon is from the Greek word "KANON," which is probably derived from the Hebrew "KANEH." The meaning is, "a measuring rod or rule." Secularly, it could be applied to carpenters or masons using a line to keep things straight. As applied to Scripture, it is the measuring rod or straight-edge, the testing rule, or critical standard by which each book of the Bible must be tested before it was admitted as a part of the sacred Scriptures.

V. *Bible Translations & Study Bibles*

Our Bible, the Word of God, containing sixty-six books by forty different writers, and written over a period of approximately 1500 years, has not one—yes, not one—discrepancy or contradiction. Many scientific facts were recorded before man ever became aware of them. The reason is simple.

“All scripture (the Bible) is given by the inspiration of God (i.e. “God breathed.”), and is profitable for doctrine, for reproof, for correction, for instruction in righteousness.” - 2 Timothy 3:16

5. *Is the Cuneiform Language Related to the Bible?*

Question: What is the Cuneiform language and is it related in any way to the Bible?

Answer: It is the oldest Semitic language known. It means “wedge-form,” from the Latin “cuneus,” meaning “a wedge.” The very ancient race called the Sumerians, a non-Semitic people of unknown origin, is thought to have occupied Babylonia before the Babylonians came. They used a stylus with a triangular-shaped end. They had 560 signs, each representing a syllable, or a word, a group of sounds, but never a letter.

The language was used by the Babylonians, Assyrians, and the great Hittite Empire (from about 2000 to 800, or more, B.C.). It spread throughout the world, reaching even Palestine and Egypt as an important commercial and diplomatic language, having an extensive and powerful influence for about 3,000 years.

One of the great archeological discoveries was made accidentally by a peasant woman in 1887. As she dug for some fertile soil in the mound Amarna, she uncovered the royal archives of Amenhotep III and his royal son, Amenhotep IV, who were Egyptian pharaohs. Eventually, more than 350 cuneiform tablets were discovered. Most were personal letters and dispatches from kings, generals, and other officers residing in Babylonia, Phoenicia, Syria, and Palestine. These were sent to the two Pharaohs at their Egyptian court.

The tablets were from two to three inches wide and three to

V. Bible Translations & Study Bibles

nine inches long, being inscribed on both sides. Many described Palestine and surrounding countries as being in a state of turmoil within; and being attacked from without. Many of them were from Abdi-Heba, governor of Jerusalem, pleading for help from Pharaoh Amenhotep IV (later known as Akhenaton) to prevent the country from being lost to Egyptian rule.

The tablets are now in the national museums of England, France, Egypt, Germany; while some others are owned by private collectors. The description of the invaders given on these tablets, fits the Hebrews from the beginning of their conquest of Canaan under Joshua so well, that it has been said: "Here we have a story of Joshua's conquest of Canaan from the enemy's side."

Archeology is the external evidence which proves the infallibility of the Word of God.

6. *What Are The Targums, Talmud, and Midrash?*

Question: What are they, and how are the Targums, Talmud, and Midrash related to the Bible?

Answer: A Targum is a translation or a paraphrase of some part of the Old Testament Scripture into the Aramaic language. The word comes from the Aramaic "targem" and means "to interpret, explain, or translate." Therefore, the passive participle "METHURGAM," reference Ezra 4:7.

A methurgemon was a translator and was also called a "targomon." The Aramaic language is derived from "Aram," one of the five sons of Shem (Genesis 10:22); and "Arama" is the word translated "Syria." The same word, with an adjective ending, is translated with reference to the language "Syrian" five times in Scripture. (See 2 Kings 18:26; Ezra 4:7 twice; Isaiah 36:11, and Daniel 2:4.) The Aramaic language is, therefore, the language of Syria.

Now, concerning the Talmud and the Midrash, neither of these are translations or paraphrases of Scripture. Rather, they

V. Bible Translations & Study Bibles

are important Jewish literature.

1. The Talmud is a Jewish work which contains the civil and religious laws not found in the Pentateuch, with commentaries upon and illustrations of these laws.
2. The foundation of the Talmud was the “Torah,” or Law. The Jews believed the Law contained two parts:
 - a. The written law as found in the Pentateuch.
 - b. The oral law, which came to be considered equally binding.
3. The Talmud consists of two parts:
 - a. The MISHNA, or oral law.
 - b. The GEMARA, the commentaries and illustrations.

Today we have God’s completed word to mankind from Genesis to Revelation. The best commentary on the Bible is the Bible, itself! In comparing Scripture with Scripture, one can never go wrong. Adding to the word of God by tradition has deceived many.

May I cite one of the many examples. Nowhere can you find in the Bible where babies are ever to be baptized; yet, many are deceived thinking their baby will not go to Heaven unless it is baptized. Here is God’s answer,

"Add thou not unto his words, lest he reprove thee, and thou be found a liar," - Proverbs 30:6

"It is better to trust in the LORD than to put confidence in man."- Psalm 118:8

7. *What Is the Masoretic Text?*

Question: Can you give me some information about the Masoretic Text.

Answer: “Masoretic” gets its name from the Hebrew word “masar,” which means to “hand down.” The Masoretes

V. Bible Translations & Study Bibles

flourished from about 500 to 1,000 A.D. They were traditionalists and notable Biblical scholars, known for the purpose of fixing and preserving the pronunciation and form of the Hebrew words. This was done about 600-700 A.D., in the days when Hebrew, as a spoken language, was beginning to die out.

Since the Hebrew was written in the consonantal text, there were no vowels in the original texts. In almost every case, the context would describe the correct form of the word. For example, “bd” might stand for bad, bed, bid, bud, or bade. Therefore, in the sentence “John is a bd boy,” it could only be rendered “bad.” In another example, if we use the English word “miter,” the vowels are “i” and “e,” which could be the official headdress of a Bishop. In the Hebrew text it would appear “mtr.” Should you put in two “e” vowels, you would have the English word “meter,” or 39.37 U.S. inches. If you put in two “o”s for vowels, you would have the word “motor.” The same with “rack” and “rock,” which would appear as “rck” in the Hebrew text; or “water” and “waiter,” which would appear as “wtr.” Therefore, to safeguard God’s word, the Masoretes inserted what was labeled “vowel-markings,” i.e., signs and accents.

The Masoretes found certain vowel sounds supplied in the reading of the consonantal text; therefore, they merely invented signs to represent these sounds.

For example, beneath the consonants you might find three dots, which denotes the sound “eh.” Two dots give the sound of “ay.” One dot is “ee.” These are called “matres lectiones,” or “mothers of reading.” This enabled Gentiles and Jews not familiar with the text to read those Hebrew words with the vowel sounds in them and know exactly what the word would be.

This standardized, or stabilized, the Hebrew language; so we would know exactly whether the word was “miter, motor, meter, or waiter or water, or rack or rock.” This text is called the Masoretic Text, abbreviated M.T. Therefore, translating the Hebrew into English can be made with less difficulty—Thanks to

V. Bible Translations & Study Bibles

the Masoretes!

8. *Is the New World Translation the Only True Bible?*

Question: My friend is a member of a certain organization and keeps telling me that their Bible, *The New World Translation*, is the only true Bible. Is this true?

Answer: Personally, I have written the Watch Tower Bible Society asking for the names of their translators, their education, the number of years of study in Greek and Hebrew, what manuscripts have been examined, and their qualifications to be classified as “scholars.” I have never received an answer. *The New World Translation* (so-called) is designed to support their own Theology.

You are probably aware this organization denies that Jesus Christ is God manifested in the flesh. (1 Timothy 3:16). In *The King James Translation*, and many others, John 1:1 reads,

“In the beginning was the Word, and the Word was with God, and the Word was God.”

In Verse 14 we are told, “And the Word was made flesh and dwelt among us...” (i.e., Jesus Christ).

The NWT has in Verse 1, “And the word was *a* god.” They put the article “a” in front of “god”; therefore, denying the deity of Christ. Since there is no article in the Greek or Hebrew for the letter “a,” they just added it to fit their own beliefs. (Read Proverbs 30:6).

They have followed the same corrupt Greek (so-called) text as the NIV translators, which was devised by two Anglican apostate preachers, named Westcott and Hort, in 1881.

For example, here are a few of the following verses that are omitted in both: Matthew 17:21; 18:11; 23:14. Also, Mark 7:16; 9:44,46; 11:26; 15:28. See also, Luke 17:36; 23:17; and John 5:4. Further, see Acts 8:37; 24:7; 28:29 and Romans 16:24.

In Luke 4:18, Jesus reading from Isaiah 6:1,2 says,

V. Bible Translations & Study Bibles

“...he hath sent me (Christ) to heal the broken hearted...”

This is omitted from both the NWT and the NIV. Since both claim to be translations, why did they both put the Hebrew word “nephalim” in Genesis 6:4 and not even translate it into the English word “giants.”

Since this organization does not believe in a literal Hell, they put the Greek word in their Bible, instead of translating it “Hell” as in the King James. Look up Matthew 11:23; 16:18; Luke 10:15; 16:23; also, Acts 2:27,31 and Revelation 1:18; 6:8; 20:13,14 where the Greek word “Hades” is used instead of the English word, “Hell.”

In the following, they put the Greek “Gehenna” instead of the English “Hell”: Matthew 5:22,29,30; 10:28; 18:9; 23:15,33; also, Mark 9:43,45,47, Luke 12:5, and James 3:6. Unless you know Greek and Hebrew, how would you know what these words mean?

Proverbs 30:5 tells us that, *“Every word of God is pure...”*
Revelation 22:19 contains a stern warning,

“...If any man shall take away from the words of the book of this prophecy, God shall take away his part out of the book of life, and out of the holy city...”

“Verily, verily, I say unto you, He that believeth on me (Jesus Christ) hath everlasting life.”- John 6:47

“It is better to trust in the Lord than to put confidence in man.”- Psalm 118:8

9. *Is the New King James True To The Hebrew & Greek Texts?*

Question: Is the New King James Version trustworthy to the Hebrew and Greek text?

Answer: After reading the preface in the NKJV concerning the King James Translation, one would wonder why Thomas Nelson publishers would even consider it possible to improve upon this translation. Here is what is said in the preface of the NKJV concerning the King James Bible.

V. Bible Translations & Study Bibles

"The King James translators were committed to producing an English Bible that would be a precise translation, and by no means a paraphrase or a broadly approximate rendering. On the one hand, the scholars were almost as familiar with the original languages of the Bible as with their native English. On the other hand, their reverence for the Divine Author and His Word assured a translation of the Scriptures in which only a principle of utmost accuracy could be accepted."

The next paragraph continues by substantiating the previous one:

"In 1786, Catholic scholar Alexander Geddes said of the King James Bible, 'If accuracy and strictest attention to the letter of the text be supposed to constitute an excellent version, this is of all versions THE MOST EXCELLENT.'"

Thomas Nelson Publishers acknowledge the translators of the KJT as producing a translation that is "precise," with the "utmost accuracy." The Catholic scholar states that the KJT is the most excellent of all versions. Then WHY the New KJV? Remember, if you can fool the publisher into thinking that something new is better, it generates MONEY in your bank account.

Of all the people I have talked with about why they use the NKJV, the answer is basically the same. "It is easier to read without the "thee's" and "thou's."

Now, let us look into the NKJV and examine some of the changes that are not readily noticed by the casual reader. But, before we do, allow me to quote from the next to last paragraph at the end of the preface, which states,

"...Furthermore, no established DOCTRINE is called in question by any doubts about the correct reading in this or that text. The Christian can approach his New Testament, i.e., NKJV, with confidence."

Yes...only if you are ignorant enough to believe this statement!

The NKJV uses a multiplicity of references that they state do

V. Bible Translations & Study Bibles

not appear in the “NU.” Most people have no idea what “NU” stands for. The “N” is referring to the 26th Edition of the Nestle-Aland Greek New Testament. The “U” is referring to the 3rd Edition of the United Bible Society’s Greek New Testament. Remember, the “NU” New Greek Testament is based largely upon two corrupt manuscripts, the Sinaitic and the Vaticanus. These two manuscripts disagree with each other in hundreds and hundreds of places. Let us examine some of the changes and suggestions that the NKJV makes, in leading you to doubt whether certain verses are supposed to be in the Bible or not.

1. Luke 4:8: “Get behind me Satan” is referenced to a footnote at the bottom of the page which reads, “NU omits, Get behind me Satan.”

2. Mark 9:44: “Where their worm does not die and the fire is not quenched.” The NKJV has a footnote which says “NU omits Verse 44.”

3. Mark 9:45,46: “Into the fire that shall never be quenched, where their worm does not die and the fire is not quenched.” The footnote to the last part of Verse 44 and Verse 45 says, “NU omits the rest of Verse 45 and all of Verse 46.”

4. Matthew 6:13: “For yours is the kingdom and the power and the glory forever. Amen. A footnote which reads, “NU omits the rest of Verse 13.”

5. Matthew 13:51: “Jesus said unto them, Have you understood all these things? They said to Him, ‘Yes Lord.’” Their footnote reads, “NU omits “Jesus said unto them.” NU omits “Lord.”

6. Matthew 17:21: “However, this kind does not go out except by prayer and fasting.” Footnote says, “NU omits Verse 21.”

7. Matthew 18:11: “For the Son of Man has come to save that which was lost.” Footnote says, “NU omits Verse 11.”

8. Matthew 1:25: NKJV has “firstborn Son” with a reference to the footnote which says, “NU a Son.” The NU, by omitting “firstborn” discredits the fact that Mary was a virgin when she

V. Bible Translations & Study Bibles

gave birth to Jesus. Since Mary had four other sons, James, Joses, Simon, Judas, and at least two daughters (Matthew 13:55,56); by omitting “firstborn,” Jesus could have been the 2nd, 3rd, 4th, or even the 7th child born to Mary. Therefore, if Jesus was not the firstborn; then Mary would not have been a virgin when Jesus was born. Is it any wonder people are confused by the NKJV.

9. Acts 3:13,26: NKJV substitutes “Servant” for “Son.” Why?

10. Acts 4:27,30: The KJT reads, “Your holy child Jesus”; but, again, the NKJV substitutes “Servant” for “child.” This is purposely done by the NKJV translators, as they translate the same Greek word as “son” in John 4:51 concerning the Nobleman’s biological son. Yet, when it refers to the spiritual relationship as the Second Person of the Trinity, they substitute “Servant” instead of “Child of God” and “Son of God.” Anyone can be a servant without being physically or spiritually related. Very subtly did they “water down” the Deity of Christ, that “God was manifest in the flesh.” (1 Timothy 3:16).

11. Reference English “Hell” and the Greek “Hades.” In the following verses you will find that the NKJV left the Greek word “Hades” in the text, without even translating it “Hell,” as done by the KJT. Look these verses up for yourself: Matthew 11:23 and 16:18. Luke 10:15 and 16:23. Acts 2:27 and 2:31. Revelation 1:18; 6:8; and 20:13,14.

In the Publishers’ Foreword of the NKJV it is stated concerning the Biblical scholars (translators) that,

“They came from England, Scotland, Canada, New Zealand, Australia, the Netherlands, Taiwan, as well as from the United States, so that the New King James Version would reflect internationally accepted English usage.”

One would think that with all these so-called translators and scholars from all these countries that, at least, one would have suggested they translate the Greek word “Hades” into the English

V. Bible Translations & Study Bibles

“Hell,” as did the King James translators. And not only that, in every case where “Hades” appears, they never once put a reference to a footnote explaining what the English is for Hades. So, unless you know Greek, you would have no idea what the word means. You could be confused into thinking this is the “mystical underworld” of Greek myth and legend.

May I draw your attention to another place where the NKJV attempts to confuse and place doubts in the minds of people concerning the Word of God. Go with me in the NKJV to Mark 16:9-20, and notice the reference to the footnote concerning these verses. This is what we read:

“Verses 9-20 are bracketed in NU-Texts as NOT ORIGINAL. They are lacking in Codex Sinaiticus and Codex Vaticanus, although nearly all other manuscripts of Mark contain them.”

Now those reading the NKJV are alerted that Verses 9-20 do not appear in the Original, which is composed of two corrupt manuscripts, the Sinaiticus (Aleph) and the Vaticanus (B). Then, they admit that nearly all other manuscripts have them. In other words, they want you to believe that two corrupt manuscripts constitute the ORIGINAL Greek text, in lieu of the Majority Text of approximately 5,400 manuscripts. This is brainwashing to the height of deception! The Lord warns Christians to beware of men who use trickery and craftiness as their tools regarding the NKJV and the NU, to spread doubt as to what really is God’s Word. Ephesians 4:14 is God’s warning to all,

“That we henceforth be no more children tossed to and fro, and carried about with every wind of doctrine (i.e. teaching), by the sleight (i.e. trickery) of men; and cunning craftiness, whereby they lie in wait to deceive;”

This is only a drop in a rainstorm of what could be written concerning the perversion of God’s Word as set forth in the NKJV. For publishers, the “name of the game” with all these new versions is MONEY! Remember, in order to avoid plagiarism of another work or translation, you have to delete words, add

V. Bible Translations & Study Bibles

words, change words, etc. to obtain a copyright. In short, the copyright guarantees that only the publisher can reap the dividends of his work. Money is what it is all about.

If the Christian is sincere and wants God Word in English, the finest translation to be had by bringing the Hebrew and Greek, word for word, into the English, is the King James Translation of the Bible.

“Add thou not unto his words, lest he reprove thee, and thou be found a liar.” - Proverbs 30:6

*“It is better to trust in the LORD than to put confidence in man.”
-Psalm 118:9*

10. Are the Sinai & Vatican the "Oldest and Best" Manuscripts?

Question: Is it true that the Sinai and Vatican manuscripts are the most reliable; and are they the ones used to translate our New Testament?

Answer: The Codex Sinaiticus is coded as “Aleph” and the Codex Vaticanus as “B”. Whenever you see these codes in Bible footnotes, it refers to these two manuscripts, described as the oldest and most reliable. However, nothing could be further from the truth! Aleph and B are, presumably, Fourth Century uncials which had very little use by their owners. Uncial manuscripts were written in capital letters, with no spaces or punctuation marks between the letters. Today we have about 267 uncials, which make up a small part of the approximately 5400 Greek manuscripts in existence today. Of the 267 uncials, only 9 agree with the Sinai and Vatican codices. 258 of the 267 uncials agree with the Majority Text, also known as the Received Text (Textus Receptus) which underlies our King James Bible. The Sinaiticus (Aleph) and Vaticanus (B) disagree with each other in hundreds of places.

There could be a couple of reasons why these two manuscripts were preserved so well. First, the owners could have recognized that these manuscripts had been perverted by heretics.

V. Bible Translations & Study Bibles

Those who copied them probably disagreed with many of the doctrinal passages. Therefore, they omitted many passages and changed others to agree with their beliefs. This could account for the fact they were recognized as fraudulent and not distributed to other churches. Second, they were in Egypt where the climate was favorable for their preservation.

Aleph and B. Most people are not aware that Aleph and B, and a handful of their allies (other corrupt manuscripts), make up the only about 1% that disagree with the 99% of the 5400 or so manuscripts, known as the Majority Text which underlie your King James Bible today.

The Sinaitic (Aleph) was discovered by Dr. Constantin Tischendorf, a German Biblical scholar and professor, in 1844. He was visiting the Monastery of St. Catherine at Mt. Sinai, when he noticed a basket of parchments that the monks had discarded as worthless. There were 43 leaves of parchment, which contained a portion of the Septuagint (a Greek translation of the Old Testament).

He returned in 1853 and found nothing more. He returned again in 1859, commissioned by the Czar of Russia; and, again, finding nothing he was about to leave. He was talking to one of the stewards, just prior to departing, who advised him he had kept in his room some copied manuscripts the monks had discarded. These contained about half of the Old Testament (Greek Translation, the Septuagint); the New Testament, with the exclusion of Mark 16:9-20 and John 7:53-8:11. Tischendorf secured these in return for some gifts to the monastery at Sinai. They were given to the great Imperial Library at St. Petersburg, (now Leningrad), Russia. In 1933, the U.S.S.R. sold it to the British Museum in London, England, where it resides today. This collection of manuscripts omits some 4,000 words from the Gospels alone; plus, about 1500 readings that show up in none of the 5400 New Testament manuscripts of the Majority Text. It also contains many other discrepancies.

Vaticanus or B. Its early history is obscure. Scholars believe

V. Bible Translations & Study Bibles

it was copied in the Fourth Century. It was written in Greek, not Hebrew, and first appears in the Vatican Library Catalogue in Rome, Italy, in 1481. For the next 328 years there didn't seem to be much interest in it. Then, when the Pope and the papal states were captured in 1809 by Napoleon, he carted off wagon loads of documents, papal archives and books. He also took the Cardinals and all the chief officers of the papal government, along with the Codex Vaticanus (B) to Paris, France. It was restored to Rome in 1815. In 1889-90, Pope Leo XIII allowed the Vatican Press to release a photographic facsimile of the manuscript. Copies could now be obtained by libraries where scholars could have access to them. It is presently in the Vatican Library in Rome, Italy, and the property of the Roman Catholic Church.

The Vaticanus contains many omissions. There are some from Genesis, 2 Kings, Psalms; and, in the New Testament, Mark 16:9-20 and John 7:53-8:11 are missing. Also, Hebrews to the end of the New Testament are missing.

What is interesting about these two fraudulent copies, Vaticanus and Sinaiticus, are the hundreds and hundreds of passages in which they disagree with each other, exposing those that copied them as heretics. One scholar said, "The Sinai and Vatican disagree with each other a dozen times on every page." Another scholar states, "It is easier to find two consecutive verses in which these manuscripts differ, than two in which they agree." Yet another says, "They disagree 70% of the time and in almost every verse of the Gospels."

"Aleph" and "B" were the two main manuscripts that B.F. Westcott (1825-1901) and F.J.A. Hort (1828-92) used to form their New Greek Testament in 1881. These two men were apostate Anglican preachers. For example, in his biography, Volume I, P.207, Westcott states, "I reject the words 'INFALLIBILITY of the Holy Scriptures' overwhelmingly." Hort's opinion was the same. These two denied most of the fundamental doctrines of the Bible. The opinions of these two apostate men with their two corrupt manuscripts, Aleph and B

V. Bible Translations & Study Bibles

(and a handful of others), underlie almost all of your new versions; which are in disagreement with the 5,400 Greek manuscripts making up the Majority, or Received Text, and which underlies the King James Translation.

The Nestle/Aland Greek Text, with its many revisions, took over from the Westcott and Hort era, along with the United Bible Society (UBS). These used basically the same Sinaitic (Aleph) and Vaticanus (B) manuscripts with its allies, which amount to less than 1% of the 5400 Greek manuscripts that make up the Majority Text. For example, the New International Version (NIV) concerning Mark, Chapter 16:9-20, wants you to believe these verses do not belong in God's Word. They draw a line across the page after Verse 8 and insert their explanation. "The two most reliable early manuscripts do not have Mark 16:9-20." The two manuscripts they are referring to are the Sinaitic and the Vaticanus, two corrupt manuscripts which disagree with each other in hundreds of places.

Notice the New King James Version (NKJV), published by the Thomas Nelson Publishers, regarding Mark 16:9-20. The footnote concerning these verses supports what we have been saying thus far. "Vss. 9-20 are bracketed in NU as not in the original text. They are lacking in Codex Sinaiticus and Codex Vaticanus, although nearly ALL OTHER Mss. (manuscripts) of Mark contain them." The "NU" stands for Nestle/Aland, United Bible Society. In other words, they want you and me to believe that the two corrupt manuscripts, Aleph and B, are the original texts. We are to, supposedly, follow their blinded philosophy and disregard the Majority Text composed of 5400 manuscripts.

Remember, all of your new versions and so-called translations are under laid by these corrupt manuscripts making up less than 1% of the Majority Text, composed of 5400 manuscripts. The NIV (New International Version), the NASB (New American Standard Bible), the NEB (New English Bible), the NKJV (New King James Version), the NAB (New American Bible), the NRSV (New Revised Standard Bible) are all the

V. Bible Translations & Study Bibles

corrupt product of manuscripts Aleph and B, and their handful of allies. These were fostered on to the unsuspecting public from Westcott and Hort's corrupt Greek Testament in 1881. Nestle/Aland "took the baton" and raced to the finish line, hand-in-hand with the United Bible Society. Then, publisher after publisher had visions of Fort Knox! Their dreams were realized as new translations poured on to the market. Their coffers were being filled; while the pockets of the unsuspecting were being emptied.

Satan is the "master deceiver," as he uses people to deceive other people. Through the greed of many, the publishers have poured out versions of perversions, leading millions into spiritual poverty. It is only *natural* for a person to ask, "Which version IS the real Word of God?"

May I, in closing, relate to you that the King James Translation is under laid by the Majority Text (5400 manuscripts). It is the finest translation we have, and this is why Satan wants to discredit it so badly. For example, the largest selling imitation of a Bible today is the NIV. What the publishers don't tell you is that there are approximately 64,000 words missing. Whole verses are missing: and, in many places, they never even translated the Hebrew and Greek words.

As evidence, look up and see if you can find the following verses in the NIV. Matthew 17:21; 18:11; 23:14. Mark 7:16; 9:44,46; 11:26; 15:28. Luke 17:36; 23:17. John 5:4. Acts 8:37; 24:7; 28:29. Romans 16:24. These are only a handful.

My prayer is that this limited information will stimulate you to a more in-depth study, so you can help others beware of Satan's deceits through these corrupt new versions.

11. Is the NIV Easier to Understand than the King James?

Question: I use the King James Translation of the Bible and love it! My friend says he uses a modern version of the Bible

V. Bible Translations & Study Bibles

because he can't understand the King James with its "thee's" and "thou's."

Answer: Some new versions boast about their substitution of the word "you" for the "archaic ye" and "thee." This sends a false message to their readers; as the King James uses the word "you" numerous times, from the first one in Genesis 1:29, to the last one in Revelation 22:21. What your friend fails to realize is that the King James uses only "ye" and "thee" as needed to distinguish between the Greek singular and plural. "Thee" is singular and "ye" is plural; therefore, using these specific renderings, the King James gives an exact representation of the Greek word.

For example, if Jesus visited a home occupied by a married couple and said, "*Ye are of your father the devil,*" the wife could not say that Jesus was only talking about her husband and not her. The reason is that "ye" is plural. New versions have thrived on deceiving the public into thinking that their version is easier to read. Behind this lie is money in the publisher's coffers at the expense of the deceived.

The largest selling so-called Bible today is the NIV (The New International Version). After reading the Preface one is now convinced that the NIV is easier to read. The fact is, when you subject the King James and the NIV to the Flesch-Kincaid Grade Level Formula, it reveals that King James has a Fifth Grade reading level and the NIV has an Eighth Grade reading level.

What the Preface of the NIV does not disclose to its readers is that they have omitted approximately 64,000 words from the Majority Text. Look in Genesis 6:4. The King James translates the Hebrew "nephilim" as "giants." The NIV just puts the Hebrew word in and doesn't even translate it; so, unless you know Hebrew, you have no idea what the meaning of the word is. In Ephesians 4:16, the NIV renders "supporting ligament" and the King James "joint." In Exodus 32:6 the NIV uses "indulge in revelry" and the King James "rose up to play." I could cite a multitude of places where the new versions have used three to

V. Bible Translations & Study Bibles

five syllable words, where the King James uses one or two syllable words equivalent to the Greek and Hebrew.

Look up the word “Hell” in your *Strong’s Concordance* and you will find most of the time the NIV gives you the Hebrew “Sheol” and the Greek “Hades.” So, unless you know Hebrew and Greek, you have no idea what the verse is speaking about.

Proverbs 30:5 tells us that,

“Every word of God is pure.”

Evidently this is not so with the NIV translators, who have omitted some 64,000 words. Psalm 118:8 would be good advice to your friend,

“It is better to trust in the LORD than to put confidence in man.”

12. *Did the Gospel Writers Copy From Each Other?*

Question: I have been told that the Gospel writers copied from each other. Is there any truth in this?

Answer: Whenever you hear something like this, always ask the person for proof. Of course, there is none. Each writer is inspired to write as directed by the Holy Spirit. The Word of God in 2 Peter 1:21 says,

“For the prophecy (i.e. God’s Word) came not in old time by the will of man: but holy men of God spake as they were moved by the Holy Ghost.”

2 Timothy 3:16 tells us that,

“All scripture is given by inspiration of God...”

Here are just a few examples to disprove the theory. Matthew records the following which are not recorded in any of the other Gospels:

1. Visit of the Wise Men (2:1-12).
2. Parable of the Ten Virgins. (25:1-13).
3. The Tribute Money. (17:24-27).

V. Bible Translations & Study Bibles

4. Parable of the Laborers in the Vineyard. (20:1-16).
5. Discourse on the Judgment Day. (25:31-46).

Mark only records:

1. The Return of Christ to Capernaum (2:1-12).
2. Blind Man Healed at Bethsaida (8:22-26).

In Luke only do we find:

1. Gabriel appears to Zacharias (1:5-22).
2. Birth of John the Baptist (1:57-80).
3. The Seventy Sent Forth (10:1-16).
4. Healing of the Ten Lepers (17:11-19).
5. Dying Thief's Confession (23:39-43).

Only recorded by John are:

1. Discourse of New Birth (3:1-21).
2. Samaritan Woman (4:4-26).
3. Raising of Lazarus (11:1-46).
4. Washing the Disciple's Feet (13:1-20)
5. Promise of the Holy Spirit (16:7-15).

Some of the Gospels give the same event, but with additional information. For example, John 12:3 records that Mary anointed the feet of Jesus, but mentions nothing about Mary pouring the ointment on the head of Jesus. Mark 14:3 records the same event, but gives the additional information of Mary anointing Christ's head with the ointment. Mark in 14:3 records three things not recorded by John. (1). The event took place in the house of Simon, the Leper. (2). The ointment was in an alabaster box. (3). She broke the box. John records several things not found in Mark, such as: (1). Mary took a pound of ointment. (John 12:3). (2). The house was filled with the odor of the ointment. (John12:3). (3). Judas objects to Mary's anointing

V. Bible Translations & Study Bibles

Christ. (John 12:4,5).

Now, back to the anointing of the feet by Mark and the anointing of the head by John—both are correct! This is verified by Christ, Himself, in Mark 14:9 when Christ stated, “*She is come aforehand to anoint my body to the burying.*” The body would include both head and feet. The Holy Spirit inspired both Mark and John as to what to record with their pens, as

“All Scripture is given by inspiration of God.” - 2 Timothy 3:16

This is why the four Gospels were written, to give us a complete composite of facts concerning our wonderful Savior, the Lord Jesus Christ; and, to show the foolishness of the accusations attacking the infallible Word of God. (1 Corinthians 1:19,20).

13a. The Ryrie Study Bible #1.

Introductory Statements and Mark 16:9-16

Question: What about the Ryrie Study Bible?

Answer: Due to the many questions we have received, as to whether I would recommend the Ryrie Study Bible, I have decided to write the following articles.

The first thing I look for in a study Bible is the author’s comments concerning the major doctrines of the Bible. I have a Ryrie Study Bible and in the front on his page addressed “TO THE READER,” he states in Paragraph Two the following:

“Every time you read this Bible, whether carefully or casually, be sure to look at the notes at the bottom of the page. These are designed to illuminate and help you understand the verses you are reading. The notes provide a variety of helps: some furnish historical or archaeological background; others translate or interpret the text more clearly; some define words and doctrines; and many refer you to other passages which relate to the same subject.”

There are many things in this study Bible that can assist the

V. Bible Translations & Study Bibles

reader in their study of the Bible concerning historical and archaeological findings. Is the same true or confusing concerning some major doctrines of the Bible? I have found that Dr. Ryrie in his study Bible states one thing in one place and then contradicts himself in another.

His notes state that in Romans 8:1 that the last half of the verse does not belong in the Bible. He states, "This phrase is not in the best manuscripts." What manuscripts is Dr. Ryrie referring to and which he does not qualify? He does the same thing in his notes concerning Mark 16:9-20, leading his readers to doubt whether these verses should be in the Bible or not. He states in his notes:

"These verses do not appear in two of the most trustworthy manuscripts of the New Testament."

Dr. Ryrie fails to disclose the names of these two manuscripts so one can see if they are trustworthy by comparing them with each other to see if they agree. You are just supposed to believe it because Dr. Ryrie said it.

There are many reasons why I would not recommend the Ryrie Study Bible. Here are just a few doctrinal issues that weigh upon my decision.

I. Mark 16:9-20.

"Now when Jesus was risen early the first day of the week, he appeared first to Mary Magdalene, out of whom he had cast seven devils.(9)

"And she went and told them that had been with him, as they mourned and wept."(10)

"And they, when they had heard that he was alive, and had been seen of her, believed not." (11)

"After that he appeared in another form unto two of them, as they walked, and went into the country." (12)

"And they went and told it unto the residue: neither believed they them." (13)

V. Bible Translations & Study Bibles

“Afterward he appeared unto the eleven as they sat at meat, and upbraided them with their unbelief and hardness of heart, because they believed not them which had seen him after he was risen.” (14)

“And he said unto them, Go ye into all the world, and preach the gospel to every creature.” (15)

“He that believeth and is baptized shall be saved; but he that believeth not shall be damned.” (16)

“And these signs shall follow them that believe; In my name shall they cast out devils; they shall speak with new tongues;” (17)

“They shall take up serpents; and if they drink any deadly thing, it shall not hurt them; they shall lay hands on the sick, and they shall recover.” (18)

“So then after the Lord had spoken unto them, he was received up into heaven, and sat on the right hand of God.” (19)

“And they went forth, and preached every where, the Lord working with them, and confirming the word with signs following. Amen.” (20)

The following is Dr. Ryrie’s opinion as to why these verses should not be in the Bible as part of its text. Here is his footnote:

“These verses do not appear in two of the most trustworthy manuscripts of the New Testament, though they are part of many other manuscripts and versions. If they are not a part of the genuine text of Mark, the abrupt ending at Verse 8 is probably because the original closing verses were lost. The doubtful genuineness of Verses 8-20 makes it unwise to build a doctrine or base an experience on them (especially vv. 16-18).”

It is evident that Dr. Ryrie is using the same two manuscripts that your modern, corrupt, translations use in denying the authority of these same verses. In the forefront of the New King

V. Bible Translations & Study Bibles

James Version (NKJV) these two manuscripts are identified as follows:

“Verses 9-20 are bracketed in NU (Nestle/United Bible Society) texts as not original. These are lacking in Codex Sinaiticus and Codex Vaticanus, though nearly all other manuscripts of Mark contain them.

These two corrupt manuscripts are what almost all of your new translations rely heavily upon. When you use a study Bible, sometimes the code name or number is given without stating the name of the manuscript. The code for the Sinaiticus is (Aleph) and the Vaticanus code is (B). Should you come across these code names, you will know which manuscripts they are referring to.

Notice in the above statement in the NKJT that outside of the Sinaiticus and Vaticanus,

“...nearly all other manuscripts of Mark contain them.”

Will you also take note Dr. Ryrie’s footnote attests to the fact that Mark 16:9-20,

“...are part of many other manuscripts and versions.”

In other words, Mark 16:9-20 are "part of many other manuscripts" and "nearly all other manuscripts contain verses 9-20." This is known as the Majority Text, as all the texts agree. It is also known as the Textus Receptus, i.e., “the text that was received”; and, therefore, authenticates the original writings. This Majority Text is the foundation that under laid the King James Translation of the Bible. They used the Majority Text, which contains Mark 16:9-20. This is why the King James Translation is by far superior to any of the new so-called translations.

It is beyond me why Dr. Ryrie rejects the majority of manuscripts, and the King James Translation, in lieu of two corrupt manuscripts that disagree with each other in over 3,000 places in the Gospels alone. This is a direct attack on God’s

V. Bible Translations & Study Bibles

Word, and implants false doubt in the minds of the saved and the unsaved.

Returning to Dr. Ryries's footnote, here he states another false assumption concerning Verses 9-20.

“If they are not a part of the genuine text of Mark, the abrupt ending at Verse 8 is probably because the original closing verses were lost.”

First, Dr. Ryrie previously wants you to believe that Verses 9-20 do not belong in the Bible, basing his opinion on two corrupt manuscripts; instead of the majority of manuscripts that contain these verses. Now, he continues sowing doubt concerning Verses 9-20 by stating,

“If they are not part of the genuine text...”

This is a false and misleading statement. The truth is, **THEY ARE PART OF THE GENUINE TEXT**, i.e., the Majority Text. Remember, Dr. Ryrie stated in his same footnote, that these Verses 9-20, “...are part of many other manuscripts and versions.” Notice his footnote, as he continues to explain why “If Verses 9-20 were in the genuine text (referring to the Sinaiticus and the Vaticanus) which do not have these verses now, it is probably because the original closing verses were lost.”

It is unbelievable to me that anyone would even entertain the thought that God could preserve all sixteen chapters of Mark, except Verses 9-20 of the last chapter. There is no way that mankind could hide or destroy what God wanted mankind to know in his written word, the Bible. Verses 9-20 are in our Bible, because God preserved, and wanted them there. Proverbs 30:5 tells that,

“Every word of God is pure...”

Matthew 4:4 states:

“But he answered and said, It is written, Man shall not live by bread alone, but by every word that proceedeth out of the mouth of God.”

V. Bible Translations & Study Bibles

Dr. Ryrie's notes concerning Mark 16:9-20 leave the Christian, and anyone else, in doubt as to what to believe concerning the Bible. This is not a help; but only a hindrance. Dr. Ryrie's footnotes continue to attack Verses 9-20. Here are his words.

"The doubtful genuineness of Verses 9-20 makes it unwise to build a doctrine or experience on them (especially vv. 16-18)."

Dr. Ryrie seems to say anything to discredit these verses. In essence, he is leading you to believe that they are not doctrinally correct, and that you should not believe what they say.

II. Bible Doctrines as Set Forth in Mark 16:9-20.

Instead of accepting Dr. Ryrie's opinion based on Aleph and B, two corrupt manuscripts; let us examine the last twelve (12) verses for ourselves, beginning with Verse 9.

1. Mark 16:9. *"Now when Jesus was risen early the first day of the week, he appeared first to Mary Magdalene, out of whom he had cast seven devils."*

- a. The Resurrection. In John 11:25 Jesus said, *"I am the resurrection and the life."* Verse 9 states the truth of Christ's Resurrection by the words, *"Jesus was risen."*
- b. He appeared first to Mary Magdalene out of whom He had cast seven demons. This is also the account given by Dr. Luke in his Gospel, Luke 8:2.

Conclusion. No doctrinal errors, here; but, confirmation of the Resurrection and His appearance to Mary Magdalene, as spoken of by Dr. Luke and Christ, Himself.

2. Mark 16:10. *"And she went and told them that had been with him, as they mourned and wept."*

- a. She witnessed about the Resurrection to the disciples. This agrees with John's Gospel, John 20:18.

V. Bible Translations & Study Bibles

Conclusion. No doctrinal errors here.

3. Mark 16:11. *“And they, when they had heard that he was alive, and had been seen of her, believed not.”*

- a. The disciples had been witnessed to concerning the Resurrection of Jesus Christ.
- b. Mark gives testimony that the eleven disciples did not believe Mary’s words concerning the Resurrection of Jesus Christ.
- c. Both a. and b. confirm Dr. Luke’s account in Luke 24:10,11.

Conclusion. No doctrinal errors here.

4. Mark 16:12. *“After that he (Christ) appeared in another form unto two of them, as they walked, and went into the country.”*

- a. Read Luke 23:13 ff.
- b. This is another testimony of two men who personally witnessed and talked to the resurrected Christ.

Conclusion. No doctrinal errors here.

5. Mark 16:13. *“And they went and told it unto the residue: neither believed they them.”*

- a. This verse tells what the two men of Verse 12 did after they believed. They went and witnessed to many others concerning the Resurrection of Jesus Christ, BUT, the others refused to believe the two men.
- b. This verse shows us that nothing has changed in mankind from the First Century to the present. Here these people rejected the testimony of two men who had met and talked with the resurrected Christ. You have the same thing today; those that believe the truth and

V. Bible Translations & Study Bibles

those that do not, as verified in John 3:36.

Conclusion. No doctrinal errors here.

6. Mark 16:14. *“Afterward he (Christ) appeared unto the eleven as they sat at meat, and upbraided them with their unbelief and hardness of heart, because they believed not them which had seen him after he was risen.”*

- a. *“Christ appeared unto the eleven”* after those who had seen Christ and had witnessed to the eleven. This same account is recorded in the Gospel of Luke, Luke 24:33-46. Dr. Luke’s account corroborates Mark’s account and gives credibility to these verses.
- b. This verse attests to the Resurrection of Christ, as He appeared unto the Eleven after His death.

Conclusion. No doctrinal errors here; BUT, only proof that these verses verify and substantiate the truth spoken of in 2 Timothy 3:16,

“All scripture (including Mark 16:9-20) is given by inspiration of God...”

7. Mark 16:15. *“And he said unto them, Go ye into all the world, and preach the gospel to every creature.”*

- a. This verse agrees with the Gospel of Matthew in Matthew 28:18,19,

“And Jesus came and spake unto them, saying, All power is given unto me in heaven and in earth.” (18).

“Go ye therefore, and teach (make disciples of) all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost.” (19).

- b. Acts 1:8 agrees with Mark 16:15.

“...and ye shall be witnesses unto me both in Jerusalem, and in all Judaea, and in Samaria, and unto the uttermost part of the earth.”

V. Bible Translations & Study Bibles

Matthew says, *“Go...make disciples of all nations.”*

Dr. Luke says, *“be witnesses unto... the uttermost part of the earth.”*

Mark says, *“Preach the gospel to every creature.”*

Matthew, Mark and Acts, by Dr. Luke, all agree; BUT, Dr. Ryrie doesn't want you to believe Mark 16:15 as he states in his footnote, and I quote:

“The doubtful genuineness of Verses 9-20 makes it unwise to build a doctrine or base an experience on them (especially vv. 16-18).

In covering Verses 9 to 15 inclusively, we have found no doctrinal errors whatsoever. But, to the contrary of Dr. Ryrie's footnote, these verses give great testimony and credibility to the Resurrection of Jesus Christ. His footnotes are in error and do much damage in undermining the reliability of God's Word. One must remember that Mr. Ryrie's opinion is based upon two corrupt manuscripts, the “Aleph” and “B,” which disagree in over 3,000 places in the Gospels alone.

We will now continue our examination with Verse 16, that Dr. Ryrie especially wants you to disregard.

8. Mark 16:16. *“He that believeth and is baptized shall be saved; but he that believeth not shall be damned.”*

The following are Dr. Ryrie's notes concerning this verse.

“16:16 baptized. This may be a reference to the baptism of the Holy Spirit. (I Cor. 12:13). Water baptism does not save (see notes at Acts 2:38; I Pet. 3:21).”

In his notes just preceding the above he states,

“The doubtful genuineness of Verses 9-20 makes it unwise to build a doctrine or base an experience on them (especially vv. 16-18).”

This is very confusing. If one is doubting that these verses are genuine, why would you bother in an attempt to explain

V. Bible Translations & Study Bibles

them? We will examine his explanation by his own two comments.

- a. His first comment is not an absolute; but, only a guess.

"This may be a reference to the baptism of the Holy Spirit (I Cor. 12:13)."

Conclusion. This is absolutely NOT a reference to the Holy Spirit's baptism. Notice carefully what Mark 16:16 says,

"He that believeth and is baptized..."

The "he" is the one who does two things: one is to believe, and the other is to have someone baptize him. He does both of these, himself, by believing, and being water baptized.

Spirit baptism (i.e., the placing of a believer into the Spiritual Body of Christ), is done by Christ and Him, alone. The Scriptures make this perfectly clear in all four Gospels. Here is Mark 1:8.

"I (John, the Baptist) indeed have baptized you with water: but he (Christ) shall baptize you with the Holy Ghost." (Also John 1:33; Luke 3:16; Matthew 3:11).

Christ does the Spiritual baptizing; whereas, the believer submits himself to water baptism. Therefore, Dr. Ryrie's statement that it may be referring to Spiritual baptism is absolutely wrong. How confusing to the person who is studying these notes.

- b. In his note the second statement is "Baptism does not save." So we have in Dr. Ryrie's notes four things:
- (1). A true statement: "Water baptism does not save."
 - (2). A false statement: "Baptism may be spiritual baptism."
 - (3). No statement explaining Verse 16.
 - (4). Dr. Ryrie doubts the genuineness of V.16 and recommends that you do not build any doctrine upon it.

V. Bible Translations & Study Bibles

It seems to me, when a person comes to a verse that they cannot explain, the easiest route is to lead you to believe it does not belong in God's Word. Then it is "thrown up for grabs." "Well, it may be Spiritual baptism, instead of water baptism. But, if it is water baptism, it cannot save for it contradicts the first part of Verse 16. But, as the Reader, I am left with nothing but doubts concerning God's Word, without any Biblical explanation of the verse, comparing Scripture with Scripture.

Mark 16:16, which is in the Bible and belongs in the Bible, deserves an exposition of what it teaches, and it does not contradict any other doctrine. The following explains the teaching of Mark 16:16, which is very easy to understand.

At one's first reading, "*He that believeth and is baptized shall be saved*" would *seem* contradictory to the multiplicity of verses which say we are saved by believing only.

- a. For example, 1 John 5:13 states authoritatively that a person can know with absolute certainty that they possess eternal life, yet there is no mention of water baptism.

"These things have I written unto you that believe on the name of the Son of God; that ye may know that ye have eternal life, and that ye may believe on the name of the Son of God." (No baptism here.)

- b. Peter states it is not water baptism; or any human effort that redeems a person; but only the blood of Christ.

"Forasmuch as ye know that ye were not redeemed with corruptible things, as silver and gold, from your vain conversation received by tradition from your fathers;" (V.18).

"But with the precious blood of Christ, as of a lamb without blemish and without spot:" (I Peter 1:18,19) (No baptism here!)

- c. And we find in John's Gospel,

V. Bible Translations & Study Bibles

“He that believeth on the Son hath everlasting life: and he that believeth not the Son shall not see life; but the wrath of God abideth on him.” (John 3:36). (No baptism here).

“Verily, verily, I say unto you, He that believeth on me hath everlasting life.” (John 6:47). (No baptism here).

Comparing these verses with Mark 16:16, there either has to be an explanation; or, we definitely have a contradiction between Peter, Mark and John! May I draw your attention to the last phrase in Mark 16:16.

“...He that believeth not shall be damned...”

It does not say,

“...He that believeth not (and is not baptized) shall be damned...”

Only those who “believe not” shall be damned, which is in perfect accordance with John’s statement in John 3:18,

“He that believeth on him is not condemned: but he that believeth not is condemned already, because he hath not believed in the name of the only begotten Son of God.”

Both Mark 16:16 and John 3:18 state that a person is condemned if they do not believe; but nothing is said about being condemned if one is not baptized! All Scriptures agree to this conclusion. Since we are not condemned for not being baptized, then what does the opposite mean when Mark says,

“He that believeth AND is baptized shall be saved?”

It is easy to understand this verse when the child of God realizes there are TWO who recognize that a person is justified as being saved. The “believing” in Mark 16:16 justifies the person in the eyes of God, as being saved. This is our POSITION in God’s eyes, our salvation by belief or faith, only.

Their public baptism is their TESTIMONY, justifying them as being saved in the EYES OF MAN. The lost will not recognize and justify a person as being a child of God; unless he hears the testimony, AND sees the works compatible to a

V. Bible Translations & Study Bibles

Christian. Baptism declares,

“For I am not ashamed of the gospel of Christ: for it is the power of God unto salvation....” (Romans 1:16a)

This identification is justification in man’s eyes that I am saved. “Believeth” in Mark 16:16 is to the Book of Romans what baptism is to the Book of James. Romans 4:5 says,

“But to him that worketh not, but believeth on him that justifieth the ungodly, his faith is counted for righteousness

Justification In God’s Eyes." No Baptism Here!

Notice James 2:17,18, where man cannot see our faith, unless it is outwardly evidenced.

“Even so faith, if it hath not works, is dead, (in man’s eyes) being alone. Yea, a man may say, Thou hast faith, and I have works: shew me thy faith without thy works, and I will shew thee my faith by my works.”

Justification In Man’s Eyes.

Therefore, “*he that believeth*” in Mark 16:16 justifies me in GOD’S EYES as being saved; AND my baptism justifies me as being saved in MAN’S EYES. “*Believeth*” is my POSITION before God; whereas, baptism is my WALK and TESTIMONY before men.

Verse 16 contains no contradictions at all. This verse only substantiates the other Scriptures that teach the two doctrines of justification: one in God’s eyes (salvation), and the other in man’s eyes (our testimony).

Conclusion. No contradictions here.

13b.The Ryrie Study Bible #2

Conclusion of the Last Twelve Verses of Mark

This is a continuation of the examination of Dr. Ryrie's notes concerning Mark 16:9-20. In our first article we covered Verses 9 to 16. We will now proceed to examine his notes concerning

V. Bible Translations & Study Bibles

Verses 17-20, which state:

“And these signs shall follow them that believe; In my name shall they cast out devils; they shall speak with new tongues;” (17).

“They shall take up serpents; and if they drink any deadly thing, it shall not hurt them; they shall lay hands on the sick, and they shall recover.” (18).

“So then after the Lord had spoken unto them, he was received up into heaven, and sat on the right hand of God.” (19).

“And they went forth, and preached every where, the Lord working with them, and confirming the word with signs following. Amen.” Mark 16:17-20.

Here are Dr. Ryrie’s words in his notes concerning these verses.

“These verses do not appear in two (Sinaiticus or “Aleph” and Vaticanus or “B”) of the most trustworthy manuscripts of the New Testament, though they are part of many other manuscripts and versions. If they are not a part of the genuine text of Mark, the abrupt ending at Verse 8 is probably because the original closing verses were lost. The doubtful genuineness of Verses 8-20 makes it unwise to build a doctrine or base an experience on them (especially vv. 16-18).”

The two manuscripts Dr. Ryrie is referring to are *not* the most trustworthy, as they disagree with each other in over 3,000 places in the Gospels alone. These are two of the most unreliable we have. Notice what 2 Timothy 3:16 has to say concerning God’s Word.

“All scripture is given by inspiration of God, and is profitable for doctrine, for reproof, for correction, for instruction in righteousness:”

I can find no doctrinal errors in Mark 16:17-20. These, compared with other Scriptures concerning the same subject agree perfectly. The following is an exposition covering the subjects spoken of in Mark 16:17-20. Other verses, such as 1

V. Bible Translations & Study Bibles

Corinthians 13:8-10, give additional information telling us *when* these miracle signs will cease, which we will cover in our next article

Dr. Ryrie states that you should not use these Scriptures for any Bible doctrine as they do not really belong in the Word of God. Now, follow with me as we examine the Scriptures to see if Dr. Ryrie is giving his readers good advice or corrupt advice!

I. The Commission: If the "Signs" Are for Today; You Must Have Them All!

This portion of Scripture is claimed by the tongues advocates to support their practice of speaking in so-called tongues. Let us examine the verses.

In Mark 16:14, we find Christ, after His Resurrection, addressing the eleven remaining disciples in a reproachful manner for their hesitancy in believing that He had actually risen from the dead.

"Afterward he appeared unto the eleven as they sat at meat, and upbraided them with their unbelief and hardness of heart, because they believed not them which had seen him after he was risen." Mark 16:14.

He then gave them this commission:

"...Go ye into all the world, and preach the gospel to every creature." (15b).

Now, of those that believe the gospel (v.17), certain "SIGNS" shall follow. Notice carefully, if you will, Christ said "SIGNS", plural; not just one SIGN, singular, of speaking in tongues.

"And these signs shall follow them that believe..." (17a)

In Verses 17 and 18, five signs are given:

1. "In my name they shall cast out devils (demons.)"
2. "They shall speak with new tongues."

V. Bible Translations & Study Bibles

3. "They shall take up serpents."
4. "If they drink any deadly thing, it shall not hurt them."
5. "They shall lay hands on the sick, and they shall recover."

The question naturally arises, "Why do those who speak in so-called tongues not exercise the other four signs?" With thousands of sick people in all our hospitals, perhaps millions, it would be inhumane and unchristian not to visit these hospitals and lay hands on the sick with Christ's promise that they "shall recover." Remember, if the sign of speaking in tongues is for today; then, so are the other four!

II. The Concern: The Purpose for the "Sign Miracles"

One must remember that the sign miracles are associated primarily with the nation of Israel. The miracles recorded in Matthew, Mark, Luke, and John were to confirm the message that Jesus was their Messiah. If Israel, as a nation, would have received Jesus Christ as their Messiah, Christ would have established His Kingdom at that time.

"...the Jews require a sign, and the Greeks (Gentiles) seek after wisdom." I Corinthians 1:22.

The Jews required miracle signs, so Christ gave them signs in abundance. In Matthew 10:5-8 he sent the apostles to Israel with the power to perform miracles as signs to Israel.

"...Go not into the way of the Gentiles ... But go rather to the lost sheep of the house of Israel. And as ye go, preach, saying, The kingdom of heaven is at hand. Heal the sick, cleanse the lepers, raise the dead, cast out devils (demons): freely ye have received, freely give."

In Luke 10:1-20, Christ sent seventy disciples out, two by two, with the power to perform miracles.

"And heal the sick that are therein, and say unto them the kingdom of God is come nigh unto you." Luke 10:9.

V. Bible Translations & Study Bibles

"Behold, I give unto you power to tread on serpents and scorpions, and over all the power of the enemy; and nothing shall by any means hurt you." Luke 10:19.

John summarized the miracle signs in John 20:30,31 by saying,

"And many other signs (miracles) truly did Jesus in the presence of his disciples, which are not written in this book: But these are written, that ye might believe that Jesus is the Christ (Messiah), the Son of God; and that believing ye might have life through his name."

Again, we emphasize, these signs were to authenticate the message that, Jesus Christ was the Messiah. The five signs given in Mark 16:17,18 were to confirm the Word they were commissioned to preach until the New Testament was completed. They agree perfectly with all other Scriptures.

"And they (the eleven disciples) went forth, and preached everywhere, the Lord working with them, and CONFIRMING THE WORD WITH SIGNS FOLLOWING." (Mark 16:20).

REMEMBER, THE NEW TESTAMENT HAD NOT YET BEEN WRITTEN. One could not open to Ephesians, Revelation, or James, and etc., as God's completed revelation to man was not yet in writing. The Book of Acts, the transition book which chronicles the infancy of the Church Age, provides some of the record of these signs prior to the Book of Revelation. Actually, the last miracles recorded in the New Testament took place about 58 A.D. (Acts 28:1-9). There were many who were not healed from about 60 A.D. on to the present. Here are some examples:

1. Epaphroditus. Philippians 2:25-30. This faithful servant of the Lord was a companion of Paul (V.25). His illness may have been caused by working so hard for the Lord that he did not take time to eat properly or get enough rest. (V.30) Whatever the cause, he almost died. The point is ... Paul, who had performed

V. Bible Translations & Study Bibles

many miracles prior to this, was unable to heal his friend. The miracle sign of healing was no longer possessed by the Apostle Paul. God did see fit to heal Epaphroditus (V.27), for Paul credits God with the healing and glory.

2. Timothy. 1 Timothy 1:2 with 5:23. Paul, in his writing to young Timothy, whom he had won to Christ, said, *"Drink no longer water, but use a little wine for thy stomach's sake and thine often infirmities."* (1 Timothy 5:23) This took place about 62 A.D. There was probably no other person whom Paul loved more than Timothy, yet he was unable to heal him as he had healed others before. Even at this time, about 34 years before the writing of Revelation, the last book of the Bible, the miracle signs had ended.

3. Trophimus. 2 Timothy 4:20.

"Erasmus abode at Corinth: but TROPHIMUS have I left at Miletum sick."

At about 66 A.D., Paul could not heal Trophimus; but, just a few years earlier, Paul had done the following:

- a. (Acts 13:1). Made a man blind.
- b. (Acts 14:8-10). Made a cripple who had never walked, WALK.
- c. (Acts 16:18). Cast out a demon.
- d. (Acts 28:8). Healed another man.
- e. (Acts 19:11,12). Performed special miracles.

"And God wrought special miracles by the hands of Paul; So that from his body were brought unto the sick handkerchiefs or aprons, and the disease departed from them, and the evil spirits went out of them."

But, now, in 66 A.D., he could not heal Trophimus and had

V. Bible Translations & Study Bibles

to leave him at Miletum sick. The miracle signs had ceased!

4. Paul. (2 Corinthians 12:7-9) Whatever illness Paul had, it affected his body for it was a "thorn in the flesh" (Body). Paul could not heal himself as he had done previously when bitten by the venomous viper. (Acts 28:1-9) He asked the Lord three times to cure him; but, in this case, it was not God's will to do so. As II Corinthians was written about 58-60 A.D., we can see the power of Paul to heal himself was not present. The miracle signs had already ceased!

III. The Conclusion: The "Miracle Signs" Are Not for Today.

In Mark 16:17 we read, "*And these signs shall follow them that believe...*" The signs listed in Mark 16:17,18 DID follow them that believed; but, only for a short period of time. These signs are recorded in the Book of Acts, the last occurring about 58 A.D. as given in Acts in 28:1-9. Now, some conclusions:

1. The last miracle signs are recorded about 58 A.D. Acts 28:1-9. They had ceased about 38 years before the New Testament was completed.

2. Paul, who had exercised these miracle signs, could no longer do them. He could not heal Epaphroditus, Timothy, Trophimus, nor himself from about 62 A.D. on.

3. Since tongues advocates claim Mark 16:17,18 as their license for speaking in tongues, they would also have the power to perform the other four miracles. As stated in Verse 7, "*These signs (plural) shall follow them that believe.*" All the signs, not just the speaking in tongues!

4. Most tongues advocates insist that all the signs given in Mark 16 are for today. A minority claim just tongues are still applicable today. To this minority, we simply refer the Scripture found in 1 Corinthians 13:8-10 where "knowledge, prophecy, and tongues" shall be done away with, or "cease", when God's written Word is complete. This was accomplished with the Book

V. Bible Translations & Study Bibles

of Revelation in about 96 A.D.

5. Ananias. In Acts 9:10-18, he exercised one of the signs by healing Paul's blindness. Why do not those speaking in so-called tongues lay their hands on the blind and allow them to see? Recently, as of this writing, I visited a very young girl in the Cleveland Clinic. She was blind, could hardly hear and had just come out of open heart surgery. They could not stabilize her breathing and could do nothing more, medically, than wait and see. Of all the tongues advocates who claim the signs in Mark 16, where is just ONE who would lay their hands on a person such as this so she could be restored to health. Does one care to step forward?

6. Stephen. Acts 6:1-15.

"And Stephen, full of faith and power, did great WONDERS (plural) and MIRACLES (plural) among the people." (V.8)

Stephen, exercising the signs of Mark 16, did wonders and miracles among the people. A far cry from someone today claiming tongues for a spiritual "high," but failing to empty our hospitals by laying on of the hands and the sick recovering.

7. Philip, the Evangelist.

"And the people with one accord gave heed unto those things which Philip spake, hearing and seeing the MIRACLES (plural) which he did. For unclean spirits, crying with a loud voice, came out of many that were possessed with them: and many taken with palsies, and that were lame, were healed." Acts 8:6,7.

Philip was exercising the signs of Mark 16, not just a sign of speaking in tongues. Why do not those who claim the signs of Mark 16 are for today, do what Philip did? We also must note that *"the people gave HEED TO THOSE THINGS WHICH PHILIP SPAKE, hearing and seeing the miracles."* The miracles were given to validate the message until the New Testament was completed. Since we have God's completed Word today in great

V. Bible Translations & Study Bibles

abundance, there is no need for the miracles.

8. Barnabas and Paul. Acts 14:3; 15:12.

"Then all the multitude kept silence, and gave audience to Barnabas and Paul, declaring what MIRACLES (plural) and WONDERS (plural) God had wrought among the Gentiles by them. Acts 15:12.

These miracles were: healing the sick, casting out demons, the power to escape death when bitten by a venomous viper. These were fulfilled in Mark 16:17,18 completely, and were not to be compared with the shallow emotionalism of the so-called speaking in tongues of today.

Before concluding, I want you to also notice Mark 16:19,

"So then after the Lord had spoken unto them, he was received up into heaven, and sat on the right hand of God."

This verse attests to the doctrine of Christ's Ascension and is in perfect agreement with Dr. Luke in Acts 1:9-11. Also, notice the words, "...sat on the right hand of God." Check and see if this is not in perfect agreement with Hebrews 1:3.

The footnotes of Dr. Ryrie, pertaining to Mark 16:9-20, are grossly in error, misleading his readers. There verses contain many doctrinal teachings which are in perfect harmony with all other Scriptures concerning these doctrines. For a more in depth Bible study concerning the manuscripts, I would strongly suggest two books to start with:

1. *Defending the King James Bible* by Dr. D.A. Waite.
2. *Last Twelve Verses of Mark* by Dean John Wm. Burgon

They can be purchased from: The Bible for Today, 900 Park Ave., Collingwood, NJ 08108.

V. Bible Translations & Study Bibles

13c. The Ryrie Study Bible #3

1 Corinthians 13:10

As we continue to examine Dr. Ryrie's notes concerning some major doctrines, as found in the Ryrie Study Bible, we now move on to a very important verse found in 1 Corinthians 13:10. The following are Verses 8-10 which will give some context as to what Verse 10 is referring to.

"Charity never faileth: but whether there be prophecies, they shall fail; whether there be tongues, they shall cease; whether there be knowledge, it shall vanish away." (V.8).

"For we know in part, and we prophesy in part." (V. 9)

"But when that which is perfect is come, then that which is in part shall be done away." 1 Corinthians 13:8-10

Dr Ryrie's note at the bottom of the page in his Study Bible concerning the word "PERFECT" in Verse 10 is as follows:

"13:10 that which is perfect. A reference to Christ's second coming."

If Dr. Ryrie's note is correct in saying that "perfect" is referring to Christ's second coming; then, knowledge, prophecies, and speaking in tongues are still in effect today; and will be until the Rapture.

At the very beginning of our examination of Dr. Ryrie's notes, I made the statement that Dr. Ryrie says something one place in his notes and then contradicts himself in another place. Now, follow with me and you will see this for yourself, as we examine Verse 11 and his notes concerning this verse. Here is Verse 11.

When I was a child, I spake as a child, I understood as a child, I thought as a child: but when I became a man, I put away childish things. 1 Corinthians 13:

Here are Dr. Ryrie's notes concerning Verse 11.

V. Bible Translations & Study Bibles

“There are stages of growth within the present imperfect time before Christ’s return. After the church began, there was a period of immaturity, during which spectacular gifts were needed for growth and authentication. (Heb. 2:3,4). With the completion of the New Testament and the growing maturity of the church, the need for such gifts disappeared.”

Dr. Ryrie contradicts himself and sends a very confusing message to his readers, along with his wrong definition of the word “perfect” in Verse 10.

A. The Contradiction.

1. Verse 11. Ryrie states that “With the completion of the New Testament...the need for such gifts disappeared.” If they disappeared, it is because Christ quit giving them when the last book of the Bible (Revelation) was completed in 96 A.D. In other words, the gifts spoken of in Verse 8, “knowledge, prophecy and tongues,” have not existed since about 95 A.D.

2. Dr. Ryrie contradicts himself by mistranslating the word “perfect,” in Verse 10; as referring to Christ; INSTEAD of the Word of God. Therefore, the “knowledge, prophecy and tongues” of Verse 8 will be in effect until Christ comes at the Rapture. Which is it, Dr. Ryrie? Did the gifts disappear when the Word of God was completed as you state in your note concerning Verse 11; or, are they in effect until the Rapture? Both cannot be true.

Dr. Ryrie’s note on Verse 10 opens the flood gate to the whole Pentecostal movement of speaking in tongues, extra-biblical visions and dreams “from God,” and a counterfeit spirituality based on emotions, feelings and visions.

Years ago when I discovered this in Dr. Ryrie’s notes, I called Dallas Theological Seminary and asked if I could speak with Dr. Ryrie. I was advised he was unavailable; but, would return my call. I did this twice and neither time was my call returned. After several weeks, I called a third time and spoke

V. Bible Translations & Study Bibles

with someone in the Theology Department. Again, Dr. Ryrie was unavailable and the man asked if he could be of help. I related to him how Dr. Ryrie had referenced the word “PERFECT” in his study Bible as being Christ instead of being the completed Word of God; therefore, opening a flood gate of false teaching to the Pentecostal movement. He acted very surprised and said he had no idea that Dr. Ryrie had done this. He stated he was definitely going to check it out and have Dr. Ryrie get back with me. I have not called them since and have not received any calls from the Seminary or Dr. Ryrie since then. It was dropped like a “hot potato” as the old saying goes.

Since Dr. Ryrie knows the Greek, I wanted to see if he had anything on Acts 2:38 concerning the Greek preposition “eis,” which is translated in the King James as “for.” Here is the King James Translation.

“Then Peter said unto them, Repent, and be baptized every one of you in the name of Jesus Christ for the remission of sins, and ye shall receive the gift of the Holy Ghost.” Acts 2:38

Here is Dr. Ryrie’s note concerning “for” at the bottom of the page.

“(for may here mean “because of” as in Matt. 12:41).”

Here, Dr. Ryrie knows the Greek well enough to pick out a little preposition “eis” that is mistranslated “for” and states, correctly, that it could be translated “because of,” which eliminates the false doctrine of baptismal regeneration.

Yet, In 1 Corinthians 13:10, he cannot discern the Greek “teleion,” translated “perfect,” as being in the neuter gender, instead of the masculine gender. How can this misnomer be done accidentally, when you know the Greek well enough to pick out a little Greek preposition that is mistranslated?

I only know this, that the Pentecostals will buy his book because it endorses their false teachings that tongues and extra-biblical dreams and visions are still experienced today. Should Dr. Ryrie have applied “perfect” correctly to the Word of God,

V. Bible Translations & Study Bibles

many Pentecostals would not have touched this Bible with a ten-foot pole! I have had, when asked, Pentecostals tell me the first place they look when buying a study Bible is in 1 Corinthians 13:10 to see if it agrees with their doctrine. Sad to say, it does!

After reading these contradictory notes by Dr. Ryrie, I believe the readers using the *Ryrie Study Bible* should have a positive exposition on 1 Corinthians 13:8-13. The following is such:

B. The Contrast of the Gifts (1 Corinthians 13:8-13).

Verse 8. In this verse four things are spoken of; three will come to an end, and one will remain. Let us examine each one separately:

1. *"Charity never faileth."* Again, the word "charity" is the Greek word "agape", and was the strongest English word for "love" known at that time. It is God's love toward the sinner.

"But God commendeth his love toward us, in that, while we were yet sinners, Christ died for us." (Romans 5:8)

This same love is given to indwell every believer in the person of the Holy Spirit. Since God is love and God is eternal, He will never die or cease to exist; and neither will His love ever fail. This means it will never drop away, die, or cease to exist. It will transcend and survive all things compared to, plus time itself, and "faileth not" to remain for everlasting. This is the only one of the four that will remain. It was a permanent gift.

2. *"Whether there be prophecies, they shall fail."* The prophecies' failing does not mean they will not come to pass. The Greek verb is "katargeo" and has the representative meanings of "abolish, cease, destroy, vanish away, make void and reduce to inactivity." In other words, at some future time' prophecies will be reduced to inactivity by being abolished. There is a time coming when no more prophecies will be given. In Verse 10 we shall examine when that time arrived.

3. *"Whether there be tongues they shall cease."* "Cease" is

V. Bible Translations & Study Bibles

the Greek verb, "pauo." It means "to cease or to stop completely." It is used in the perfect tense. This means that when tongues do cease, the action of ceasing will never be interrupted, but will continue forever. In plain words, once tongues cease they will never be reactivated again at anytime in the future. The act of ceasing will remain perfect, without interruption, for eternity. We might also add, the Greek word, "pauo" for "cease," is also in the Greek middle voice, denoting emphasis. Therefore, the most emphatic statement in this verse is, "TONGUES SHALL CEASE." We shall discover when they were to cease, shortly.

4. *"Whether there shall be knowledge, it shall vanish away."* "Vanish away" is the same Greek word, "katargeo," translated "fail" referring to the "prophecies" in this verse. It is also translated "shall be done away" in Verse 10 and "put away" in Verse 11.

The word "knowledge" is the Greek, "gnosis," which is also translated "knowledge" in 14:6. It denotes knowledge, especially and absolutely concerning spiritual truth. At this time, when a group of Christians met together, they could not open the Bible to the New Testament, as it had not been completely written. God would give, at His discretion, a special knowledge of His word to a believer who, in turn, would relate it to the group. 1 Corinthians 14:26 clarifies this,

"How is it then, brethren? when ye come together, every one of you hath a psalm, hath a doctrine, hath a revelation..."

This "revelation" is closely related to "knowledge." "Revelation" is defined as "an expression of the mind of God for the instruction of the church." "Knowledge" is defined in the Greek as a "knowledge especially and absolutely of a spiritual truth." (*Vine's Expository Dictionary of New Testament Words*).

Until the Word of God was completed, God would give a special knowledge of His Word, instantaneously, to a believer who, in turn, would speak it to the assembly. When the written

V. Bible Translations & Study Bibles

Word of God was completed, there would be no more need for this special knowledge. Therefore, it was to be done away with at that time.

Verse 9. "*We know in part.*" This is referring to the Word of God. "*In part*" is the Greek, "ek-merous," meaning "a part or portion of the whole. (*Vines'*) 1Corinthians was written about 57 A.D.; while Revelation, the last Epistle, was written about 96 A.D. Since all the Word of God had not yet been given, they only had knowledge of the portion ("part") that had, thus far, been revealed.

"We prophesy in part." Many more prophecies were yet to be revealed. They could only give forth what they had received thus far. The time was coming when the consummation of all prophecies would be given. It is the same with other portions of God's Word. Tongues were sometimes the means of giving forth a portion of the prophecy and knowledge of God's Word. When the end of God's revelation to man, the Book of Revelation, was written, there would be no more prophecies. There would be no additional knowledge outside of the Bible, and tongues would have already ceased.

Verse 10. **The key word in this verse is "*perfect.*"** Those, that endorse tongues today, say it is referring to Christ's coming. If that were true, then knowledge, prophecy and tongues would be manifested until He comes. If, on the other hand, "perfect" is referring to the written Word of God; then, what they claim as tongues today must be the working of a counterfeit spirit, and not the Holy Spirit. Since the Book of Revelation was completed, God has never given the gift of tongues to anyone. If tongues, today, were of the Holy Spirit, the Holy Spirit would be contradicting God's Word--and that is impossible!

The word "*perfect*" is the Greek word "teleion" meaning "complete." Here are the simple facts to consider:

1. Merrill F. Unger, author of *New Testament Teaching on Tongues*, earned his A.B. and Ph.D. degrees at Johns Hopkins

V. Bible Translations & Study Bibles

University and his Th.M. and Th.D. degrees at Dallas Theological Seminary where he was professor of Old Testament Studies. He has authored numerous books which are widely distributed and read, such as:

- a. Unger's Bible Dictionary
- b. Unger's Bible Handbook
- c. Archaeology and the Old Testament
- d. Archaeology and the New Testament
- e. Biblical Demonology
- f. Demons in the World Today
- g. The Haunting of Bishop Pike

I believe that Professor Unger is well-qualified to give the correct teaching from the Greek concerning the word "PERFECT" in 1 Corinthians 13:10. Here are his words from his book, *New Testament Teaching on Tongues*, Page 95.

"But when that which is perfect is come [Greek, to teleion, the completed and final thing, which means 'the New Testament Scriptures'; the neuter in the Greek denotes neither Christ nor his advent, both of which thoughts are foreign to the context],

He continues on Page 96, stating:

"Tongues were to cease because the completed revelation of Scripture in the canonical book of the New Testament would eventually make prophecy, knowledge, and tongues unnecessary and useless." (I Cor. 13:11,12).

2. The noted Greek scholar, A.T. Robertson, defines it as "full grown and mature."

3. Charles R. Smith, Th.D., was Assistant Professor of Greek and Theology at Grace Theological Seminary, Winona Lake, IN. In 1972, his book entitled *Tongues in Biblical Perspective* was published. Here are Professor Smith's words

V. Bible Translations & Study Bibles

concerning “that which is perfect” on Page 75.

“The term “that which is perfect” does not refer to the Lord Himself at His coming, because the article translated “that which” is neuter, not masculine in gender.”

4. Mark G. Cambron, D.D., LITT.D. One of the greatest Bible teachers of the 20th Century. He founded Seaside Mission winning untold numbers of Jewish people to the Lord. He taught at Tennessee Temple Schools in the Bible School, at the request of Dr. Lee Roberson, President. He has authored several books, one of which is *The New Testament, A Book-by-Book Survey*. Here is Dr. Cambron’s teaching concerning the word “perfect” on Page 230 of his book.

“But when that which is perfect is come, then that which is in part shall be done away” (V.10). “That which is perfect” is not speaking of the coming of the Lord Jesus Christ; indeed He is the Perfect One, but the Holy Spirit is speaking of the full revelation of God—that which is perfect—and when the full revelation of God is finally given, then these gifts of prophecy, tongues and wisdom will be withdrawn...When the entire New Testament was written, there was no further need of these gifts.”

5. Dr. Gromacki says, "The word "perfect" (teleion) does refer to the end of a process or development ... the Second Coming of Christ is not a process, it is an instantaneous event, the word "perfect" cannot be referring to Christ because "perfect" definitely has reference to the end of a process or development of something. The something, of course, is the Word of God."

6. Dr. Gromacki further says, "It (the word "perfect," teleion, in the Greek) is never used in the New Testament to depict the (a) Second Coming of Christ, (b) the Millennium, or (c) the Eternal State".

Dr. Gromacki was Professor of Bible and Greek, and Chairman of the Division of Biblical Education at Cedarville College in Ohio. He is also the author of several books.

7. The word, "*perfect*" (teleion), is an adjective which is

V. Bible Translations & Study Bibles

here used as a noun. In the Greek it is found in the NEUTER gender. The Greek expresses the neuter, feminine and masculine genders, depending on who or what is referred to. If "perfect" was referring to a person, it would be found in the feminine or masculine gender. Since it is in the NEUTER gender, it is referring ... not to a person, but an object, which is the completed Word of God.

8. If any person is still in doubt concerning this teaching concerning the word, "perfect," I would advise you to write several reputable Christian colleges and ascertain from their Greek professors the meaning of the word.

Much more could be written concerning the words "perfect" and "in part." However, I feel if these simple facts are not conclusive enough, pages more would make no difference to those who refuse to accept the truth. The Apostle Paul put it as bluntly and simply as it could be stated, "*But if any man be ignorant, let him be ignorant.*" (14:38). Paul wrote this after concluding 1 Corinthians, Chapters 12 through 14. In other words, Paul says, "I have written unto you the commandments of the Lord, (14:37), about tongues. Therefore, if you will not accept it, you will just have to remain deceived (ignorant)."

"Child To Adult"

Verse 11. "Child to Adult." The first illustration of "*in part*" and "*perfect.*"

1. Contextual Reference. Just as it takes time for a child to reach completion, or adulthood, so God, in time, gave us His completed Word. Just as the Church Age was a mystery to Israel, "*Which in other ages was not made known unto the sons of men, as it is now revealed ...*" (Ephesians. 3:5). So was God's completed Word to mankind. "*Child*" is to "*in part God's Word*" as the "adult" is to "the completed Word of God."

When Christ spoke in John 16:12, "*I have yet many things to say unto you, but ye cannot bear them now.*" This would be applicable to the "*child*" and "*in part.*" When John spoke in

V. Bible Translations & Study Bibles

Revelation 22:18, "...If any man shall add unto these things, God shall add unto him the plagues that are written in this book." This, then, would be applicable to the "perfect" or completed Word of God.

2. Spiritual Reference. Some of the characteristics of a child are: he pouts, he cries because of little things, he must always have his own way, he throws temper tantrums, he seeks attention, he needs constant care, and etc. How characteristic of some Christians! The length of time one has been a Christian does not necessarily represent his growth. One Christian could grow spiritually, in one year, more than one who has been a Christian for 5 years.

In Corinth, they were seeking the gift of tongues, which they thought reflected their spirituality; instead of coveting earnestly the best gift that God had given them

The practical lesson would be: Are we desiring some spiritual gift or office in order to impress others as to how spiritual we are? Are we acting like children, pouting when we do not get our own way? Are we always crying about little things, losing our temper or always seeking attention? Paul is telling the Corinthians that it is time to put away those things of a child and grow up to be a mature adult in the Lord. As a Christian, where would you place yourself spiritually? As an infant, adolescent, or adult child of God? As the Word of God was completely given, so we should grow to be complete in Him.

"Mirror To Clear View"

Verse 12a. Mirror to Clear View. The second illustration of "in part" and "perfect."

The word "glass," no doubt, has reference to the mirrors that were used in those days. The mirrors were of "polished" metallic surfaces which reflected objects, but imperfectly, since the figure seems to be behind the mirror--the observer seemed to see "through it." (David Brown) Since the glass (mirror) was used metaphorically of the incomplete Word of God; i.e., we could not

V. Bible Translations & Study Bibles

see the absolute clear view of things until God's Word was written in its entirety. Since "glass" contrasted to "face to face"; then "face to face" must also be used metaphorically in reference to the completion of God's Word.

As one would watch an artist begin to draw the picture of a man, it would first be viewed as incomplete (the mirror). As one stands and watches the artist, he finishes the drawing of the man. You are now standing "face to face" with the completed picture. As we stand today, we can look "face to face" at God's completed picture of this world; because we are looking at it through God's completed Word, the Bible.

In Verse 9, "in part" is a reference to God's Word. In Verse 10, "perfect" is referring to God's Word. It would then be a gross contextual error to apply "face to face" to Christ, instead of God's completed picture as viewed through His completed Word. Let us be as honest with the context here as we are with the rest of the Word of God.

"Shall Know As I Am Known"

Verse 12b. The third illustration of "in part" and "perfect."
"Shall know as I am known"

"Now I know in part" is the same as spoken of in Verse 9, "we know in part and we prophesy in part," that is the incomplete Word of God. Or, I know only the part of God's Word that has been revealed thus far.

"But then" is future tense and is contrasted to "now I know," which is present tense. Since "now I know in part" is referring to God's Word, "but then" is also referring to God's Word at the time it would be completed. When the Bible was completed, one could then know as completely about God; as the Bible revealed Him to us.

Just as completely as God knew us; we may know Him as completely, from the revelation of Himself to us through His Word. Just as God created me physically, he recreated me spiritually by the new birth. (John 3:3,7). May I learn of Him

V. Bible Translations & Study Bibles

and love Him as His child, as much as He loved me while I was yet a sinner. *"Thanks be unto God for His unspeakable gift."* As God has fully revealed Himself to me through His Word, may I fully give myself to Him in this world.

Verse 13. Three things would remain after God's Word is complete: faith, hope, and charity (love). We can have faith in Christ, hope for the future; but, the greatest thing we can do is extend the love of God to others as God has given to us. If you are saved, you have God's love within you in the person of the Holy Spirit. The greatest thing you can do is tell someone else what Christ did for you. If you possess this kind of love (charity), the greatest of all, you can then say as Paul in Romans 1:16,

"For I am not ashamed of the gospel of Christ; for it is the power of God unto salvation to every one that believeth; to the Jew first, and also to the Greek."

Conclusion. Dr. Ryrie's notes stating that the word "PERFECT" in 1 Corinthians 13:10 is in reference to Christ; instead of the Word of God, is in gross error. He fails to discern between the neuter and the masculine gender of the word "perfect." Therefore, he leads his readers to believe that speaking in so-called tongues, additional knowledge via visions and dreams, and that future prophecies are still being given until the Rapture. This is basically the teaching of the Pentecostal movement. How misleading these notes are on Verse 10, although their purpose is supposed to be to aid the Christian. Instead, they teach a person, Christian or non-Christian, to endorse a false doctrine.

13d. The Ryrie Study Bible #4

James 2:14,19,24

Section One: The "Two-Coupon Ticket to Heaven."

We are continuing our examination of Dr. Charles Ryrie's

V. Bible Translations & Study Bibles

notes, in the *Ryrie Study Bible*, concerning key verses pertaining to major doctrines of the Bible. This section pertains to his notes on James, Chapter Two, Verses 14, 24.

1. James 2:14. *“What doth it profit, my brethren, though a man say he hath faith, and have not works? can faith save him?”*

The following are Dr. Ryrie’s notes concerning Verse 14.

“Can faith save him? Can that (a non-working, dead, spurious) faith save a person? James is not saying that we are saved by works, but that a faith that does not produce good works is a dead faith. James was not refuting the Pauline doctrine of justification by true faith; but a perversion of it. Both Paul and James define faith as a living, productive trust in Christ. Genuine faith cannot be “dead” to morality or barren to works. An illustration of spurious faith is given in vv. 15-16.

This so-called explanation is contradictory within itself. Dr. Ryrie expresses his opinion as to what he thinks the word “FAITH” has to produce, in order for a person to be saved. He adds his own words to faith; which does nothing more than endorse LORDSHIP SALVATION. I want to stop here and quote Ephesians 2:8,9 from God’s Word. We can then compare it against Dr. Ryrie’s opinion.

“For by grace are ye saved through faith; and that not of yourselves: it is the gift of God: (8). Not of works, lest any man should boast.” (9)

Now let us insert Dr. Ryrie’s words concerning faith for salvation into Ephesians 2:8,9 and see who is right.

- a. Ryrie - “Ye are saved through TRUE faith.”
- b. Ryrie - “Ye are saved through A WORKING faith.”
- c. Ryrie - “Ye are saved through A LIVE faith.”
- d. Ryrie - “Ye are saved through A LIVING faith.”
- e. Ryrie - “Ye are saved through PRODUCTIVE faith.”
- f. Ryrie - “Ye are saved through A GENUINE faith.”

V. Bible Translations & Study Bibles

I do not see any of Dr. Ryrie's words concerning faith in Ephesians 2:8,9. Do you? I only see his philosophy. Basically, Lordship Salvation is defined as "being willing to submit your life to serving Jesus as your Savior to receive salvation. This is the "front door" of Lordship Salvation. The "back door" to Lordship Salvation is here endorsed by Dr. Ryrie who, in essence, is saying that if you are really saved by "genuine" faith, you will live a moral life and have good works. Both the "front door" and "back door" of Lordship Salvation are false, Satanic doctrines predicated on man's opinion, and not the Word of God. Actually, Lordship Salvation is not salvation at all; but a faith plus works perversion which does not result in eternal salvation.

Vine's Expository Dictionary of Greek New Testament Words states the following concerning the word "belief,"

"Belief as a verb is the gr. "PISTEUO" to believe, also to be persuaded of, and hence to place confidence in, to trust signifies in the sense of the word, reliance upon."

Strong's Exhaustive Concordance of the Bible,

"Believeth in Romans 4:5 is the gr. "PISTEUO" and defined as: "reliance upon Christ for salvation."

Salvation is by faith in the death and resurrection of Jesus Christ and that He paid for all my sins: past, present, and future, period! Christ's last words on the Cross as given in John 19:30 were, "...It is finished...!" Salvation is offered only as a free gift, received only by faith. And that is faith...period!

"For by grace are ye saved through faith; and that not of yourselves: it is the gift of God: Not of works, lest any man should boast." Ephesians 2:8-9.

2. Another interesting statement in which Dr. Ryrie contradicts himself is:

"James was not refuting the Pauline doctrine of justification by TRUE FAITH (i.e. good works), but a perversion of it."

V. Bible Translations & Study Bibles

I do not find in any of Paul's epistles that he states that all Christians WILL have good works, and if they do not, they are not saved; because they do not have Dr. Ryrie's so-called "genuine faith."

The statement that James was not contradicting the Pauline doctrine of justification is contradictory to the truth itself. Paul never taught that faith in Christ for salvation would, in the absolute sense, produce good works in every Christian. The difference between the false doctrine predicated here in this footnote and a true Biblical doctrine is the following: the difference between two little words, "shall" and "should."

- a. False Doctrine – If you were really saved, you *shall* have good works.
- b. True Biblical Doctrine – If you are a Christian you *should* have good works as a testimony before others.
- c. The following illustrates the difference between "shall" and "should."

(1). "Should." Titus 2:11,12: *"For the grace of God that bringeth salvation hath appeared to all men, (11) Teaching us that, denying ungodliness and worldly lusts, we should live soberly, righteously, and godly, in this present world;" (12).*

This is God's desire for all His children. Here we have a choice.

(2). "Should." Philippians 2:9,11: *"Wherefore God also hath highly exalted him, and given him a name which is above every name:(9) And that every tongue should confess that Jesus Christ is Lord, to the glory of God the Father: (11)."*

"Should" is God's will for every Christian; but, each has a free will choice.

(3). "Shall" – Romans 14:10-12. This is at the

V. Bible Translations & Study Bibles

Judgment Seat of Christ where the Christian does not have a choice; but, *will do* what Christ demands.

“...for we (Christians) shall all stand before the judgment seat of Christ. (10b) For it is written, As I live, saith the Lord, every knee shall bow to me, and every tongue shall confess to God. (11) So then every one of us shall give account of himself to God.” Romans 14:10-12.

Now let us look again at James 2:14 and we will see that James is addressing Christians who are already saved. Dr. Ryrie attests to the same fact himself. Notice carefully in this verse, next to the words “My brethren,” is the letter “b” which he references to James 1:16, which states:

“Do not err, my beloved brethren.” (Christians).

Further proof that Dr. Ryrie knows James is addressing Christians is verified by his own words in his footnote to James 1:1. This is very important to notice, since we are saved by faith in Christ, only, and not “*of ourselves*”; or of any good works whatsoever. (Ephesians 2:8,9) Telling us Christians that we’re not really saved without good works would make Christ a liar. James 1:1 states:

“James, a servant of God and of the Lord Jesus Christ, to the twelve tribes which are scattered abroad, greeting.”

Now, Dr. Ryrie’s notes concerning this verse.

“1:1 to the twelve tribes which are scattered abroad. The letter is addressed to Jewish CHRISTIANS (cf. 2:1; 5:7) scattered throughout the world.”

One must keep in mind that James is speaking to Christians concerning their testimony and the way they live, in order to be justified in MAN’S eyes. If a Christian is living a disreputable lifestyle and trying to convince others he is saved, his testimony will fall on deaf ears. He is not justified as being saved in the eyes of others, without a godly lifestyle. This is what James is saying in 2:14.

V. Bible Translations & Study Bibles

“What doth it profit, my brethren, though a man say he hath faith, and have not works? can faith save him?”

Now let us analyze what James is saying in this verse.

1. *“My brethren...”* identifies those he is speaking to as Christians, as he is calling them his brethren. This is spiritually, not physically.

2. *“What doth it profit...”* “Profit” has to do with something you earn. It cannot be referring to salvation, as salvation is never earned or given as a profit for something you do. Salvation is a free gift, received only by faith and never because God owes you something!

3. *“Though a man say he hath faith...”* If a man says he has faith in Jesus Christ, he is not talking to himself; but someone he is witnessing to.

4. *“And hath not works?”* This man’s lifestyle is known to be deplorable by the person he is witnessing to. James identifies this man as a Christian; but, one who is living a worldly life.

5. *“Can faith save him?”* This cannot be speaking of the man’s salvation, as we know that he is already saved since James identifies him as a spiritual brother in Christ. The Lord looks where we cannot see. Notice in 1 Samuel 16:7b.

“...for the LORD seeth not as man seeth; for man looketh on the outward appearance, but the LORD looketh on the heart.”

The Lord knew this man was saved; because He could see his faith was in the death and Resurrection of Jesus Christ. We can only observe the outside actions of a person. In other words, can this man, being witnessed to, believe that this person telling him about his faith is really saved? Therefore, his testimony of faith in Christ cannot justify him as being saved, because his lifestyle or his walk is not compatible with his testimony or his talk. His witnessing will fall on DEAD EARS!

In the front of the *Ryrie Study Bible*, on Page v., addressed

V. Bible Translations & Study Bibles

“TO THE READER” in Paragraph 2, we are told the following:

“Every time you read this Bible, whether carefully or casually, be sure to look at the notes at the bottom of the page. These are designed to illuminate and help you understand the verses you are reading.”

With all due respect, in studying Dr. Ryrie’s notes on James, Chapter 2, we find instead a dark cloud of confusion raining down two false doctrines: one of Predestination for salvation, and the other of Lordship Salvation. We include Predestination because they teach “the saved ones will serve.”

I want to continue this examination of Dr. Ryrie’s footnotes concerning one more verse, James 2:24.

“Ye see then how that by works a man is justified, and not by faith only.”

Here are Dr. Ryrie’s notes at the bottom of the page concerning this verse.

“2:24. This verse is the reply to the question of v.14. Unproductive faith cannot save, because it is not genuine faith. Faith and works are like a two-coupon ticket to heaven. The coupon of works is not good for passage, and the coupon of faith is not valid if detached from works.”

John MacArthur, who is a staunch Predestinationalist, and advocate for Lordship Salvation, loves Dr. Ryrie’s notes on James, Chapter 2. On his web site, “Faith According to the Apostle James,” he says this concerning Dr. Ryrie’s notes.

“Here even Charles Ryrie sounds like an advocate of Lordship Salvation.”

How sad Dr. Ryrie applies this passage to justification in God’s eyes for salvation; instead of justification in man’s eyes of our testimony and lifestyle. Nowhere is it found in God’s Word that a person is justified by works for salvation.

God’s Word refutes Dr. Ryrie’s lie in teaching faith and works as the two coupons of your ticket to Heaven!

V. Bible Translations & Study Bibles

1. *“Therefore being justified by faith, we have peace with God through our Lord Jesus Christ:” Romans 5:1*
2. *“And if by grace, then is it no more of works: otherwise grace is no more grace. But if it be of works, then is it no more grace: otherwise work is no more work.” Romans 11:6*
3. *“For by grace are ye saved through faith; and that not of yourselves: it is the gift of God: (8) Not of works, lest any man should boast.” Ephesians 2:8-9*
4. *“But to him that worketh not, but believeth on him that justifieth the ungodly, his faith is counted for righteousness.” Romans 4:5*
5. *“Knowing that a man is not justified by the works of the law, but by the faith of Jesus Christ, even we have believed in Jesus Christ, that we might be justified by the faith of Christ, and not by the works of the law: for by the works of the law shall no flesh be justified.” Galatians 2:16*
6. *“Even as Abraham believed God, and it was accounted to him for righteousness.” Galatians 3:6*
7. *“Therefore by the deeds of the law there shall no flesh be justified in his sight: for by the law is the knowledge of sin.” Romans 3:20*

I would like to bring out a point that is very often overlooked when a person is advocating a false doctrine. Will you notice Dr. Ryrie’s addition of the word “GENUINE” to faith, leading one to believe you are not really saved if you don’t have good works. Check his footnotes to James 2:14 and James 2:24, and notice that he uses the words “GENUINE faith.” Yet these words do not appear anywhere in our King James Translation, which includes his Study Bible Notes. This is done to add clout to his philosophy that you are not saved without works.

Martin Luther does the same thing in his Catechisms where

V. Bible Translations & Study Bibles

he adds “Holy” to baptism and “Holy” to the baptismal water. This is done to add “clout” to his teaching of the false doctrine of baptism for salvation.

Maybe Dr. Ryrie and Martin Luther have both overlooked Proverbs 30:6.

“Add thou not unto his words, lest he reprove thee, and thou be found a liar.”

I am sure most people are aware of Abraham’s nephew named Lot. When you examine Lot’s life from Genesis 13 on into Genesis 19, you cannot find any good works that this man has done. When two angels came to Sodom and visited Lot, the Sodomites surrounded his house to obtain the two men for a homosexual relationship. Instead, Lot offered his two daughters to the Sodomites to do with as they wished. I don’t know how much lower a father could go than that! If we hold to Dr. Ryrie’s philosophy, Lot was never a saved man.

As I have previously stated, Dr. Ryrie states one thing in one place and then contradicts himself in another. Describing Lot, God says in 2 Peter 2:7,8 that Lot was a righteous man.

“And delivered just Lot, vexed with the filthy conversation of the wicked:”(7).

“(For that righteous man dwelling among them, in seeing and hearing, vexed his righteous soul from day to day with their unlawful deeds;)” (8).

Here God says Lot was saved by being a righteous man, yet I cannot find anything righteous recorded about him. Now let us check Dr. Ryrie’s footnotes concerning Lot in 2 Peter 2:7,8.

“2:7 just Lot. Lit., righteous Lot. He was a righteous man in that he believed God and was vexed at the licentiousness of the wicked people about him, though his life was lived for himself.”

Dr. Ryrie says Lot was a righteous man because he believed God; but, he had no good works as he lived his life for himself.

V. Bible Translations & Study Bibles

But now Dr. Ryrie contradicts himself by stating in his notes for James 2 the following:

“Unproductive faith cannot save, because it is not genuine faith. Faith and works are like a two-coupon ticket to heaven.”

As one can readily see, Lot did not have both coupons for his "ticket to Heaven." But, he had one and that was faith in God. He was void of the "coupon of works." One can only wonder why Dr. Ryrie continually contradicts himself, saying in his notes for James 2 that you have to have faith and works together; or, you are not really saved. Now, when he comments concerning Lot, he says just the opposite. He says Lot was righteous, or saved, which is exactly what God says. When someone teaches false doctrine, as Dr. Ryrie is doing in James, Chapter 2, you will almost always find as you continually search their writings, they will continually contradict themselves.

It is not my intention to write a whole exposition on James, Chapter 2. I only want to show the false teaching of Lordship Salvation which Dr. Ryrie advocates in his notes concerning this passage of Scripture.

The preceding is another reason why I do not recommend the Ryrie Study Bible.

Section Two: James 2:19

In James 2:19 the Bible says *"Thou believest that there is one God' thou doest well: the devils also believe and tremble."* How can we be saved by believing while they (the demons) believe and are lost?"

"Thou believest that there is one God; thou doest well: the devils (demons) also believe, and tremble."

Here is Dr. Ryrie's note concerning James 2:19.

"The unity of God was a fundamental belief in Judaism. But if that belief did not produce good deeds, it was no better than the "monotheism" of the demons. = demons.tremble = shudder."

V. Bible Translations & Study Bibles

1. Dr. Ryrie's Sound Doctrine Concerning John 15:6:

In his footnote for this verse, Dr. Ryrie states a Christian can be void of good works, as his sinful life is producing no good works. These works will be burned at the Judgment Seat of Christ. This person is still a Christian without possessing good works, he says, "just like Lot was."

2. Dr. Ryrie's False Doctrine, as he contradicts himself by his notes, as we have seen.

"Unproductive faith cannot save, because it is not genuine faith. Faith and works are like a two-coupon ticket to heaven. The coupon of works is not good for passage, and the coupon of faith is not valid if detached from works." (James 2:24 Note.)

Since Dr. Ryrie knows the truth concerning John 15:6 and states the opposite concerning James 2:24, it is difficult for me to assume this is done accidentally. One thing is for sure, he will be applauded by those Christians who uphold sound doctrine in John 15. He will also be applauded by those who endorse the false doctrines of Predestination for Salvation and Lordship Salvation for his notes on James 2.

This is another reason why I would not recommend *The Ryrie Study Bible*. One must be consistent in sound, doctrinal teaching as, if you are not, it will only confuse the reader instead of building up strong Christians in the faith.

The word "devils" should be translated demons, for there is only one devil; but, many demons. The philosophy of Dr. Ryrie is simple: if the demons believe the same as we do, then they should be saved also. In support of a works salvation, it is also pointed out that the word "believe" in James 2:19 comes from the same Greek word as "believe" in John 3:16 which states,

"For God so loved the world, that he gave his only begotten son, that whosoever believeth in him, should not perish but have everlasting life."

Now, if the demons believe and tremble, we must have to do

V. Bible Translations & Study Bibles

more than just believe, for they believe; but, all their thoughts and works are bad. "We *must* have good works to be saved" is the claim of the modernists and liberals.

How does a child of God answer such a claim? There is no question that the demons also believe that Jesus died for the sin of the world exactly as we do. The question is...WHEN DID THEY BELIEVE?

An Illustration: A boy in school may think he can whip another boy smaller than he. Finally, they get into a fight and the bigger boy gets beaten up. If you were to ask the bigger boy now if he believes the smaller boy can whip him, he will tell you, "Yes, I sure do!" The point is, he didn't believe it *before* the fight, but he certainly does now! He is a believer now; but, only after he lost the fight.

The demons are those angels that followed Lucifer when he said in his heart,

"I will ascend into heaven, I will exalt my throne above the stars of God, I will sit also upon the mount of congregation, in the sides of the north: I will ascend above the heights of the clouds: I will be like the most high" (Isaiah 14:13, 14).

Now in verse 15 God says,

"Yet thou shalt be brought down to Hell, to the sides of the pit."

In Matthew 25:41 we are told that God created the everlasting fire for the devil and his angels (now demons).

"Then shall he say unto them on the left hand, Depart from me, ye cursed, into everlasting fire, prepared for the devil and his angels."

Their sentence is already passed, do they believe it? Absolutely! Remember, some of the most wicked demons are chained in place called "Tartarus" awaiting their final destiny in everlasting fire. See 2 Peter 2:4 and Jude 6.

The demons that are not chained know this and believe. They also believe that Jesus Christ is the Son of God (Mark

V. Bible Translations & Study Bibles

5:7,8)...but they believed too late. They should have joined the angels that believed God; instead of believing the Devil. You see, they believe now; because they have seen God's judgment, but now it is too late.

A good example of this is given in Luke 16, where a rich man who was an unbeliever died. Upon entering torment, he changed his mind and began believing. Let us read the record in Luke 16:22-24,

"...the rich man also died, and was buried; And in Hell (Hades), he lift up his eyes, being in torments, and seeth Abraham afar off ...And he cried and said, Father Abraham, have mercy on me, and send Lazarus, that he may dip the tip of his finger in water, and cool my tongue, for I am tormented in this flame."

Now, notice in Verses 27 and 28,

"Then he (rich man) said, I pray thee therefore, father, that thou wouldest send him to my father's house: for I have five brethren; that he may testify unto them, lest they also come into this place of torment."

The rich man who was lost, believed, but he believed too late. His destiny was already begun. The demons believe; but, they have believed too late, their judgment has already been pronounced.

As I have previously stated, Dr. Ryrie gives his opinion one place in his notes; and, then, often contradicts himself in another. In essence, Dr. Ryrie states in his notes on James 2:19 that, if your faith in Christ for salvation does not produce good works, then you are lost and destined for Hell, just like the demons.

Dr. Ryrie then contradicts himself in his notes on John 15:6 concerning a Christian who is void of good works. John 15:6 states the following:

"If a man abide not in me, he is cast forth as a branch, and is withered; and men gather them, and cast them into the fire, and they are burned."

V. Bible Translations & Study Bibles

Here are Dr. Ryrie's notes concerning this verse.

"They are burned. This refers to the works of the believer. The Christian who does not abide in Christ cannot do what pleases God; therefore, his works will be burned at the judgment seat of Christ, though he himself will be saved." 1 Cor. 3:11-15.

Dr. Ryrie's notes here are absolutely correct and a teaching of sound doctrine according to the Word of God!

I believe it is appropriate to close this article with an admonition. Do not wait until it is too late (death) to trust the Lord Jesus Christ as the One who made your payment for sin. Don't be like the demons or the rich man in Luke 16. Here is God's warning in 2 Corinthians 6:12, "*Behold now is the accepted time; behold now is the day of salvation,*" because tomorrow may never come. One will not be in torment one second until they believe, but they will have believed too late. Yes, the demons also believe, and no wonder they tremble, looking only to the sure judgment of everlasting fire, because they believed too late.

"...Now is the accepted time..."

13e. *The Ryrie Study Bible #5*

Romans 8:1

Dr. Ryrie leads his readers to believe that the last half of Romans 8:1 does not belong in the Bible. Here is the verse.

"There is therefore now no condemnation to them which are in Christ Jesus, who walk not after the flesh, but after the Spirit. "

Here are Dr. Ryrie's notes concerning this verse.

"8:1 Who walk not after the flesh, but after the spirit. This phrase is not in the best manuscripts."

What manuscripts is Dr. Ryrie talking about? Is it the same two, Aleph and B, which he previously said were the most trustworthy concerning Mark 16? Then it would have to at least

V. Bible Translations & Study Bibles

include these two; also known as the Sinaiticus and Vaticanus. The footnote that states that the last part of Verse 8 is not in the best manuscripts, is just not true. The King James translators used the Majority Text. That is the majority of all the manuscripts that agree. Remember, the Sinaiticus and the Vaticanus disagree in over 3,000 places in the Gospels alone.

When you read the King James Translation, once in a while you will notice an italicized word. This indicates the word is not in the original text; but, is inserted to help in the English flow of reading. It is not there to change the meaning of the verse or context, only to aid in the flow of reading.

Now, notice that the verse in question, i.e. Romans 8:1, has no italicized words showing that the majority of the manuscripts contained the complete verse, as translated from Greek to English.

The problem that I have found in regard to Romans 8:1 is that pastors try to use this verse for salvation; quoting only the first half of the verse, which states:

“There is therefore now no condemnation to them which are in Christ Jesus,...” Romans 8:1a

I have heard this quoted as a salvation verse by many pastors, many times, down through the years, without quoting the rest of the verse. Here is the rest, or last part of the verse.

“who walk not after the flesh, but after the Spirit.” Romans 8:1b

When the whole verse is quoted, it is speaking of our walk, i.e., our service with the Lord, NOT our salvation. The problem arises when a person sees the word “condemnation,” and it seems to register in their mind as “condemnation to Hell.” Read this passage carefully, and you will see that the condemnation is in reference to the sins committed by a Christian who is walking in sin by obeying their fleshly desires. These sins are condemned at the Judgment Seat of Christ and will be burned as the Christian suffers loss of rewards; but, is still saved.

V. Bible Translations & Study Bibles

*“If any man's (a Christian) work shall be burned, he shall suffer loss (of rewards): but he himself shall be saved; yet so as by fire.”
1 Corinthians 3:15*

The phrase “saved; yet so as by fire” is a figure of speech which may be illustrated by a person running out of his burning house, without having time to bring his belongings. Spiritually, he is saved; but, has few rewards in Heaven.

Notice that there is no condemnation to those who are walking in obedience to the will of God as directed by the Holy Spirit in the Word. 1 John 3:6 lets us know that,

“Whosoever abideth in him sinneth not: ...”

When a Christian is “abiding” or walking with the Lord, they are sending ahead rewards that they will receive at the Judgment Seat of Christ.

“If any man's (Christian's) work abide which he hath built thereupon, he shall receive a reward.” 1Corinthians 3:14

Therefore, Romans 8:1 is speaking of our SERVICE to the Lord. If one does not understand this and tries to use this verse for salvation, you have to do one of two things:

1. You either have to quote only the first half of the verse or;
2. You have to do as Dr. Ryrie has done. You must try to find a corrupt manuscript that omits the last half of the verse. If the last half of this verse had not appeared in the majority of the manuscripts, the King James translators would have put it in italics, which they did not as it is IN the Majority Text.

This footnote is very confusing and is misleading to the Reader who probably wonders now, “Just exactly what part of the Bible is in the Bible?” This whole verse belongs where God put it, and that is in the Bible! The footnote is very misleading and sends a false message. This is another reason why I would not recommend the *Ryrie Study Bible*, which only confuses the person who has a desire to know the truth.

V. Bible Translations & Study Bibles

13f. The Ryrie Study Bible #6

Isaiah 45:18

“For thus saith the LORD that created the heavens; God himself that formed the earth and made it; he hath established it, he created it not in vain (Hebrew - “tohuw”, he formed it to be inhabited: I am the LORD; and there is none else.”

Genesis 1:1, 2:

“In the beginning God created the heaven and the earth.” (1)

“And the earth was without form, and VOID (Hebrew – “tohuw”); and darkness was upon the face of the deep. And the Spirit of God moved upon the face of the waters.” (2)

Notice that the word “VAIN” in Isaiah 45:18 and the word “VOID” have exactly the same meaning: which is, according to *Strong’s Exhaustive Concordance of the Bible* the following:

1. An undistinguishable ruin,
2. emptiness,
3. empty place,
4. without form,
5. waste,
6. a desolation.

Isaiah 45:18 states specifically that God did not create the original Earth in the above condition, as stated in Isaiah. “*He (God) created it not in VAIN;*” i.e., without form, a waste, an undistinguishable ruin, etc. Since it was not created that way; then, it had to BECOME that way, as asserted in Genesis 1:2a, “*And the earth WAS without form and VOID...*” The word “WAS” should be translated “*BECAME* (or “had become”) *without form and void.*” It is the same Hebrew word which is translated “*BECAME*” in Genesis 2:7, “*And man BECAME a living soul.*”

V. Bible Translations & Study Bibles

The angels and Lucifer dwelt on the original creation (Isaiah 14:12-17 and Ezekiel 28:12-18). Ezekiel 28:15 speaks of Satan when he inhabited the original creation.

“Thou (Lucifer) wast perfect in thy ways from the day that thou wast created, till iniquity was found in thee (Satan).” (Ezekiel 28:15).

God then excommunicated Satan from the Earth which, then, became “without form and void” due to God’s judgment. Christ described Satan’s fall in Luke 10:18,

“And he said unto them, I beheld Satan as lightning fall from heaven.”

This is just a short briefing to bring you to Dr. Ryrie’s notes concerning Isaiah 45:18, where he states the exact opposite of what this verse teaches. It would appear that Dr. Ryrie is a young earth advocate who has just followed the crowd in having to believe just the opposite of what the Bible states.

1. The Bible, in Isaiah 45:18, states that God’s original creation was not created as a waste, an empty place, without form, or a desolation, as found in Genesis 1:2. Rather, God states that the original creation was just the opposite; having been created as a beautiful garden of Eden, created to be inhabited by Lucifer and the angels.

*“...he created it not in vain, he formed it to be inhabited: ...”
(Isaiah 45:18b)*

2. Dr. Ryrie states exactly the opposite and wants his readers to believe his young earth philosophy, instead of God’s word. Here is his footnote to Isaiah 45:18.

“45:18 He created it not in vain. Though the original condition of the earth was “without form...”

Notice carefully that Dr. Ryrie quotes from Isaiah 45:18 what God says concerning the original creation. “He (God) created it (the Earth) *NOT in vain*”;i.e., NOT a waste or

V. Bible Translations & Study Bibles

desolation, as it later became as described in Genesis 1:2. After quoting what God says, Dr. Ryrie continues by stating just the opposite.

“Though the original condition of the earth was “without form.”

Here he makes God contradict Himself, if you want to believe Dr. Ryrie. The contradiction is in Dr. Ryrie’s philosophy and not in God’s inerrant Word. Dr. Ryrie also refuses to accept the correct translation of “BECAME without form and void,” instead of the mistranslation of “*WAS without form and void.*”

Dr. Ryrie states in his notes on Genesis 1:2 that the word “WAS” in the phrase, “*And the earth WAS without form and void.*” “ may mean “BECAME” as in Genesis 19:26.” May I also add that the same Hebrew word is also translated “BECAME” in Genesis 2:7. Dr. Ryrie refuses to accept “BECAME” in this passage, as it would blow his young earth philosophy to pieces! BUT...it fits perfectly and is complimentary to Isaiah 45:18!

With these major doctrinal perversions projected by Dr. Ryrie, of which I have only listed a few; these have weighed upon my decision not to recommend his Study Bible.

In Dr. Ryrie's notes on Genesis 1:2 he states the words, “*WAS without form and void,*” MAY MEAN “*BECAME.*” This teaches me nothing about which is correct, according to the Hebrew words, “WAS,” or, “BECAME.” Ryrie just throws it up in the air for his readers to take their choice! Therefore, he offends no one; but has taught me nothing.

VI. Catholicism & Lutheranism

1. *Did Christ Have Any Brothers or Sisters?*

Question: Did Jesus have any brothers and sisters? I asked a certain clergyman and he told me that Mary did not have any other children.

Answer: In Matthew 12:46,47 we are given the information concerning Christ's mother and his brothers. In reality, they were Christ's half-brothers; as Mary received the conception from the Holy Spirit for Christ's birth; while his half-brothers had Joseph for their father.

"While he (Christ) yet talked to the people, behold, his mother and BRETHREN stood without, desiring to speak with him. Then one said unto him, Behold, thy mother AND THY BRETHREN stand without, desiring to speak with thee."

A short time later, when Christ was speaking in the synagogue, they were astonished, and stated in Matthew 13:55,56 the following:

"Is not this the carpenter's son (Christ)? is not his mother called Mary? and his BRETHREN, James, and Joses, and Simon, and Judas. And his SISTERS, are they not all with us..."

This verse gives the names of four other sons of Mary; and since the reference to "his sisters" is in the plural, this indicates two and maybe more. This, therefore, shows Mary had at least six other children besides Christ.

Paul also makes mention of one of Mary's other sons in Galatians 1:19.

"But other of the apostles saw I none, save JAMES THE LORD'S BROTHER."

As stated in Psalm 119:169,

"Let my cry come near before thee, O LORD: give me understanding according to thy word."

...the Word of God, concerning this question, gives us an

VI. Catholicism & Lutheranism

understanding of what is true and what is not. Mary had at least six other children besides Christ, their father being Joseph; therefore, they were half-brothers to Christ.

2. *Can a Priest Change Bread & Wine to Christ's Body & Blood?*

Question: A friend, who happens to be Roman Catholic, told me that their priest, when conducting the communion service, has the power to turn the wine into the actual blood of Jesus Christ. Also, that the wafer becomes the literal flesh of Jesus' body. Does the Bible support or refute this practice?

Answer: What your friend told you is exactly what the Roman Catholic Church teaches. Their usual reference is to John 6:54:

"Whoso eateth my flesh, and drinketh my blood, hath eternal life: and I will raise him up at the last day."

If this teaching were true, it would be nothing more than cannibalism. All one has to do to understand what Jesus meant when he said, "eat my flesh and drink my blood," is to read the surrounding verses. He did not offer them His physical body to eat from; nor did He cut a vein and fill a cup with His literal blood for them to drink.

Christ, Himself, explains what he meant by that statement in Verses 40 and 47,

"And this is the will of him that sent me, that everyone which seeth the Son, and BELIEVETH ON HIM, may have everlasting life: and I will raise him up at the last day." (40) "Verily, verily I say unto you, He that BELIEVETH on me hath everlasting life." (47)

Jesus was simply telling them that He, as the symbolic "Bread of Life," was going to give His flesh and blood upon the Cross as the perfect sacrifice for the sins of the world. Therefore, anyone who would believe in Him as their personal Savior would

VI. Catholicism & Lutheranism

never perish, but have eternal life. This is further substantiated at the Last Supper.

"And as they were eating, Jesus took bread, and blessed it, and brake it, and gave it to the disciples, and said, Take eat; this is my body." And he took the cup, and gave thanks, and gave it to them, saying, Drink ye all of it. For this is my blood of the new testament, which is shed for many for the remission of sins."- Matthew 26:26-28

The bread and the "fruit of the vine" (v.29), when partaken of at communion, are only symbolical of the real body and blood of Christ which He sacrificed at Calvary.

I have personally talked with hundreds of Catholics through the years, and very few comprehend this belief that the "fruit of the vine" and the bread actually turns into literal flesh and blood of Christ when taken at communion. I have many Catholic friends and have asked them if the bread and wine has tasted any differently, as...similar to human flesh or human blood. I have never found anyone who said it did.

This practice by Roman Catholicism is termed "Transubstantiation." Their terminology for the Lord's Supper is "Eucharist" which comes from the Greek word "eucharistia" and is translated "thanksgiving" in 2 Corinthians 4:15, "giving of thanks" in Ephesians 5:4, and "thanksgiving" in Colossians 2:7 (as well as many other places in the New Testament.

3. *Was the Virgin Mary Sinless?*

Question: I am 26 years old and have been taught all my life by my church that Mary was sinless, ascended bodily to Heaven without dying; and that I am to pray to her and she will intercede to God for me. Is this true? Also, in Luke 2:24, why did Mary offer a sacrifice?

Answer: Concerning Luke 2:24 and Mary's sacrifice, the answer is found in Leviticus 12. Every Jewish woman was required after giving birth to offer a sin sacrifice. Leviticus

VI. Catholicism & Lutheranism

12:6,7 states,

“...she shall bring a lamb of the first year for a burnt-offering, and a young pigeon, or a turtledove, for a SIN-OFFERING... Who shall offer it before the Lord, and make an atonement for her;”

In Verse 8 we are again told the offering was for...

“...a sin-offering: and the priest shall make an atonement for her and she shall be clean.”

Hebrews 10:5 states concerning Christ,

“...a body hast thou prepared for me (Christ).”

This, Mary fulfilled by the Virgin Birth.

Mary offered the sin sacrifice for herself; acknowledging that she, herself, was a sinner. (Romans 3:23). Nowhere in the Bible are we ever told to pray to Mary; or to worship Mary.

The shepherds came to SEE CHRIST, the Savior Who had just been born. (Luke 2:11,15,17). The wise men came to worship Jesus Christ, and Him only. The wise men (not kings) asked in Matthew 2:2,

“...Where is he (Christ) that is born King of the Jews? for we have seen his star in the east, and are come to worship him.”

Christ, not Mary.

Only Christ can mediate and intercede for man, not Mary.

In 1 Timothy 2:5, God's word is made perfectly clear,

“For there is one God, and ONE MEDIATOR between God and men, the man CHRIST JESUS.”

Romans 8:34,

“...It is Christ that died, yea rather, that is risen again, who is even at the right hand of God, who also maketh INTERCESSION for us.”

Christ is our Savior, not Mary, as the angel announced to the shepherds,

VI. Catholicism & Lutheranism

“For unto you is born this day...a Saviour, which is Christ the Lord.” - Luke 2:11

“And they said, Believe on the Lord Jesus Christ and thou shalt be saved...” - Acts 16:31

Who are you going to believe—God or man?

4. *Where Is Lent Found in the Bible?*

Question: Where is the observance of Lent taught in the Bible? Chapter and verse, please.

Answer: We have no record in the Bible, anywhere, where the Apostles, Disciples, or any Christians ever observed Lent. It is a tradition, devised by man, evidently taken from Christ’s fasting for forty days and forty nights, as given in Matthew 4:2. I have never seen anyone yet who has gone forty days and forty nights without eating, as did Christ!

Lent is nothing more than another tradition to make people feel good about themselves, just as the Jews did with their traditions. In Mark 7:7, Jesus Christ rebuked the Jews for their traditions.

“Howbeit in vain (“emptiness”) do they worship me, teaching for doctrines the commandments of men.”

In Verse 9, Christ further states that,

“Full well ye reject the commandment of God, that ye may keep your own tradition.”

Tradition says that Ash Wednesday starts the Lenten Season. There are many variations, according to culture. The pastor, or priest, is supposed to take the ashes from the burning of last year’s palm branches and place some on the forehead of the person in the sign of a cross. Then, he supposedly blesses the person. You will find nothing in God’s Word to support this practice.

The Christian is supposed to be a testimony and witness for Christ every day of the year. Spreading the Gospel is not done by giving up something for a few days, or putting ashes on your

VI. Catholicism & Lutheranism

forehead; but, by speaking to others about Christ.

"So then faith cometh by hearing, and hearing by the word of God." - Romans 10:17

"For our rejoicing is this, the testimony of our conscience, that in simplicity and godly sincerity, not with fleshly wisdom but by the grace of God, we had our conversation in the world, and more abundantly to you-ward." - 2 Corinthians 1:12

Therefore,

"Beware lest any man spoil you through philosophy and vain deceit, after the tradition of men, after the rudiments of the world, and not after Christ.- Colossians 2:8

5. *Can Men Forgive the Eternal Results of Sin?*

Question: Does John 20:23 teach that men have the power to forgive other peoples sins, especially preachers?

Answer: John 20:23 states,

"Whose soever sins ye remit, they are remitted unto them; and whose soever sins ye retain, they are retained."

This we know has reference to any Christian who presents the Gospel; whether it be a preacher in the church, or a layman on the street. For those who believe the Gospel, their sins are remitted by Christ and are saved. For those that reject the Gospel, their sins are retained, because they have rejected Christ's forgiveness.

In John 8:24, Christ said,

"...ye shall die in your sins: for if ye believe not that I am he, ye shall die in your sins."

The Word of God in Colossians 2:13 lets us know it is Christ who forgives our sins, not the preacher.

"And you, being dead in your sins and the uncircumcision of your flesh, hath he quickened together with him (i.e., Jesus Christ), having forgiven you all trespasses."

VI. Catholicism & Lutheranism

Nowhere in Scripture will you find the Apostles ever claimed to forgive sins. The Gospels of Mark and Luke tell us,

"...who can forgive sins but God only." - Mark 2:7
"Who can forgive sins, but God alone?" - Luke 5:21

The Word of God denounces any so-called ministers who insert themselves as mediators between you and God, claiming they can forgive your sins in the name of Jesus. 1 Timothy 2:5 is perfectly clear,

"For there is one God, and one mediator between God and men, the man Christ Jesus."

Not the preacher.

The Apostle Peter never claimed he could forgive anyone's sins. Peter directed people to Christ for forgiveness. Notice in Acts 2:21,

"And it shall come to pass, that whosoever shall call on the name of the Lord shall be saved."

The great Apostle Paul, who wrote 14 of the 27 New Testament epistles, stated in Acts 13:38,39, that it was Jesus Christ who forgives sins, not the preacher.

"Be it known unto you therefore, men and brethren, that through this man (Jesus Christ) is preached unto you the forgiveness of sins: (38) And by him (Jesus Christ) all that believe are justified from all things, from which ye could not be justified by the law of Moses. (39)"

"Every word of God is pure..." -Proverbs 30:5

But not so, with the words of some preachers! (2 Corinthians 11:13-15).

6. Please Explain "And Call No Man Your Father..."

Question: What does it mean in Matthew 23:9 where it says,

"And call no man your father upon the earth: for one is your Father, which is in heaven."

VI. Catholicism & Lutheranism

Answer: We know the word "father" in this verse applies to religious leaders, not our biological fathers, as in Ephesians 6:2, children are told to

“Honour thy father and mother.”

In Ephesians 6:4 the Lord addresses the fathers,

“And, ye fathers, provoke not your children to wrath; but bring them up in the nurture and admonition of the Lord.”

Please read and re-read all of Matthew 23, as it graphically portrays these religious leaders with their pretense of piety, their long, fancy robes, their love of being noticed and of sitting at the head of the table. (Verses 5,6). They prided themselves in being addressed as “Rabbi” (v.7) and “father” (v.9). Christ rebuked these religious leaders, the Scribes and Pharisees, for their hypocrisies. They were nothing more than the workers of Satan. We have priests and rabbis doing the same thing today.

One needs to understand who the Scribes and Pharisees were. The Scribes Christ was dealing with were the students, interpreters and teachers of the Old Testament Scriptures. They were held in high esteem by the very people whom they had deceived. Christ rebuked them publicly for teaching their damnable traditions, instead of the word of God. Mark, in Chapter 7, records Christ denouncing them,

“...Full well ye reject the commandment of God, that ye may keep your own tradition.” (9). “Making the word of God of none effect through your tradition...” (13). “Howbeit in vain (emptiness) do they worship me, teaching for doctrines the commandments of men.” (7).

The Pharisees arose in the time of the Maccabees, called “separatists” because they separated themselves from the ambitious political party in their nation. They were the proponents and guardians of the written and oral law. In belief, they presented themselves as conservative; but, their religious orthodoxy was spiritually bankrupt and barren. In Luke 11:39, Christ rebuked their hypocrisy,

VI. Catholicism & Lutheranism

“And the Lord said unto him, Now do ye Pharisees make clean the outside of the cup and the platter; but your inward part is full of ravening and wickedness.”

Neither was John the Baptist, fooled by them, as he addressed them in Matthew 3:7,

“But when he saw many of the Pharisees and Sadducees come to his baptism, he said unto them, ‘O generation of VIPERS, who hath warned you to flee from the wrath to come?’”

Christ, Himself, in Matthew 23:9 warned the people not to be fooled by these pretenders when He said,

“And call no man your father upon the earth: for one is your Father, which is in heaven.”

Christ addressed them as “hypocrites” six times in this chapter. In Matthew 23:27, He told them that they,

“...appear beautiful outward, but are within full of dead men’s bones, and of all uncleanness.”

Sometime back, while witnessing to a Catholic priest who wanted nothing to do with Christ for his salvation, I asked him why he liked to be addressed as “Father” when Christ, Himself, had denounced it. He told me, “Once the people call the priests, “Father, their allegiance is to them; and they will believe anything else we tell them.” That was the first time I ever had a priest admit that to me. He had a very arrogant attitude while making that statement, and was very proud that he could control the peoples’ thinking by his ecclesiastical “power” of being a priest.

Paul also described these religious leaders in 2 Corinthians 11:13-15.

“For such are false apostles, deceitful workers, transforming themselves into the apostles of Christ. (13) And no marvel; for Satan himself is transformed (pretending to be something they are not) into an angel of light. (14) Therefore it is no great thing if his (Satan’s) ministers also be transformed as the ministers of righteousness...(15)”

VI. Catholicism & Lutheranism

I have personally asked approximately 150 priests if they would show me from the Bible how I could know, for sure, I am going to Heaven when I die. Not even *one* of them could do that. I entertained one priest for supper on three different occasions. Each time I called him ahead of time, giving him the questions I wanted to discuss with him, so he would have time to prepare. He was very personable, friendly, and open to the Scriptures. His last visit lasted about three and a half hours as he was very interested in the verses concerning salvation. Many of the verses I showed him, he was not familiar with at all.

It was a shock to my wife and me when he told us he had taken hardly any Theology courses in his training for the priesthood. I believe he trusted Christ for his salvation. Shortly after that visit, he was transferred to a parish in another area.

Truly, the priests are a “god” in the eyes of many people. They have deceived the people by the damnable doctrine (heresy) of good works to merit salvation, along with “baptismal regeneration”; then, getting the people to address them as “Father,” in spite of Christ’s warning in Matthew 23:9. The irony of this, the priest leaves a person with the feeling of disrespect if they do not address him as “Father.” When behind the pulpit the priest begins to read the Lord’s prayer in Matthew 6:9,

“...Our Father which art in heaven, Hallowed be thy (God’s) name.”

It doesn’t seem to register with people that the Bible says that God in Heaven is to be addressed as FATHER, NOT THE PRIESTS on Earth. It is unbelievable how these false teachers can mesmerize and control the minds of people to trust *their* words, instead of God’s Word, the Bible.

Christ’s final rebuke to these false teachers is staggering.

“Ye serpents, ye generation of vipers, how can ye escape the DAMNATION OF HELL?” -Matthew 23:33

The prophet, Jeremiah, in his day warned the people about trusting false teachers, instead of the Lord.

VI. Catholicism & Lutheranism

“Thus saith the LORD, Cursed be the man that trusteth in man, and maketh flesh his arm, and whose heart departeth from the Lord. (5) Blessed is the man that trusteth in the LORD, and whose hope the LORD is (7).” - Jeremiah 17:5,7

Calling the priest “Father,” a title reserved only for God, is just one of the many false teachings exposed that prevail in the organization of Catholicism. When their false teaching is exposed, the people many times falsely accuse the Christian of hating Roman Catholics. No, the Christian hates the false teaching and deception of Catholicism; but, NOT the people.

A few years ago, a young lady, raised in the Roman Catholic Church, was invited to our church by a Christian friend. She came for the Sunday morning service and returned for the evening service. That night, she received the Lord Jesus Christ by faith, as her personal Savior. If the friend who invited her to church truly hated Roman Catholics, she never would have invited her to church...would she? Jesus Christ freed her from the bondage of Catholicism. By receiving Christ as her Savior she experienced John 8:36,

“If the Son (Jesus Christ) therefore shall make you free, ye shall be free indeed.”

By the way, her husband was ordained some time back and she and her husband have headed up our youth group for the past several years. It all began when her Christian friend, who was “not ashamed of the Gospel of Christ,” invited her to church.

One more instance. A few years ago, a Christian woman in our church had been witnessing to her husband and trying to get him to come to church with her. He had been raised in the Catholic Church. He would drive her to church, but would wait for her in the car until church was over. He finally gave in and attended the Sunday morning service with his wife. That morning, during the invitation, he trusted Christ as his personal Savior. A few years later, we were privileged to ordain him into the ministry that the Lord had called him to. He presently pastors an independent, fundamental Bible church in Ohio.

VI. Catholicism & Lutheranism

In conclusion: If the priest can lie to the people; should not Christians be bold enough to tell them the truth?

“For God hath not given us the spirit of fear; but of power, and of love, and of a sound mind.” - 2 Timothy 1:7

7. What About the Apostle's Creed?

Question: Where did the Apostle's Creed come from and what is meant by “church creeds?”

Answer: Church creeds are simply declarations, so stated, that various churches and denominations have adopted. They inform any and all who are interested in what their organization believes, teaches, and follows. They are drawn up by men and not inspired as is the Word of God, the Bible. Most fundamental churches have what is called a “Statement of Faith.” This incorporates a more comprehensive coverage of their beliefs, other than just the “Apostle's Creed.” These consist of their belief in and of the scriptural teachings concerning the major doctrines of the Bible, such as:

1. Theology: Doctrine of God.
2. Christology: Doctrine of Christ.
3. Anthropology: Doctrine of Man.
4. Pneumatology: Doctrine of the Holy Spirit and so-called speaking in tongues.
5. Ecclesiology: Doctrine of the Church
6. Eschatology: Doctrines of the Rapture, the 7-year Tribulation, Judgment of the Nations, Millennial Reign of Christ, etc.
7. Hamartiology: the Doctrine of Sin.
8. Soteriology: the Doctrine of Salvation.
9. Angelology: those of God, those of Satan (or Demons).

Now, the Apostle's Creed:

VI. Catholicism & Lutheranism

“I believe in God the Father Almighty, Maker of Heaven and Earth, and in Jesus Christ, His only Son, our Lord, who was conceived by the Holy Spirit, born of the Virgin Mary, suffered under Pontius Pilate, was crucified, dead and buried. The third day He arose from the dead, He ascended into Heaven, and sitteth on the right hand of God the Father Almighty. From thence he shall come to judge the quick and the dead. I believe in the Holy Spirit, the Universal Church, the communion of Saints, the forgiveness of sins, the Resurrection of the body, and the life everlasting—Amen.”

It should be noted that the Apostles had absolutely nothing to do with the drafting of the creed, “The Apostle’s Creed.” This was drawn up by men; many, many years after the apostles had died. It should also be noted that there are various versions of the “Apostle’s Creed. The one I have given seems to be the most accepted version. Theologians are familiar with another well-known creed, called the Athanasian Creed, so-called because a theologian by the name of Athanasius drew it up. Christians should be aware that these, and other creeds, are not inspired as is the Word of God, the Bible, and do not have any authority such as the Scriptures do.

Personally, I cannot see any reason for a church to stand up and quote the so-called “Apostle’s Creed, which is absolutely meaningless. God wants His Word taught, not man’s creeds. God’s words in 2 Timothy 4:2-4 may be appropriate:

*“**Preach the word** (not a creed); be instant in season, out of season; reprove, rebuke, exhort with all longsuffering and doctrine (God’s Word) (2). For the time will come when they will not endure sound doctrine; but after their own lust shall they heap to themselves teachers, having itching ears (3); And they shall turn away their ears from the truth, and shall be turned into fables (4).”*

8. *Is There Any Scripture for the Office of the Priesthood Today?*

Question: Can you tell me why the Catholic Church has

VI. Catholicism & Lutheranism

priests and other churches have pastors? Is there any Scripture for the office of the priesthood today?

Answer: There is no Scripture sanctioned by God for the office of the priesthood today. The office of priest, as they are today, was created by the Roman Catholic Church, not God. Mainly, there are three aspects concerning the priesthood. First, you have the Old Testament priests (in the past). Secondly, you have the present priesthood, occupied by Christ alone. Thirdly, you have the future when the Christians will reign as “priests and kings” in the Millennial Kingdom with Christ, judging the Earth. Let us examine the Scriptures concerning each segment of the priesthood.

The Past: The Old Testament Priest. The office of priest was introduced to Moses by God. Moses was a Levite (Exodus 2:1,10); therefore, the priest would come from the tribe of Levi. Notice Deuteronomy 18:1,

“The priest the Levites, and all the tribe of Levi...”

Exodus 28:1 says,

“And take thou unto thee Aaron thy brother, and his sons with him, from among the children of Israel, that he may minister unto me in the priest’s office, even Aaron, Nadab, and Abihu, Eleazar and Ithamar, Aaron’s sons.”

The rest of the men (Levites) had the responsibility of the tabernacle; i.e., setting it up, taking it down, and tending all the vessels therein. (Read Numbers 1:50-53).

1. There were many responsibilities of the Old Testament priests. Let us compare a few of the characteristics of God’s appointed priesthood and priests with those of man’s self-appointed priesthood, that of the Roman Catholic Church:

A. God’s priest must be an Israelite and of the tribe of Levi.

ERROR: The Roman Catholic Church’s appointment of a

VI. Catholicism & Lutheranism

Gentile priest is directly opposed to the word of God. Gentile priests are in a position God never gave them. The character and position are totally fictitious. The feminist movement has brainwashed America by doing the same thing in putting women into the office of a pastor. Your Pentecostals, Lutherans, Methodists, Presbyterians, etc., have “bowed their knees to Baal,” instead of the true and living God. 1 Timothy 3:1 says,

“This is a true saying, If a man (not a woman) desire the office of bishop (i.e. overseer or pastor), he (not she) desireth a good work.” (Read 1 Timothy 2:11,12).

B. The priest has to be married. Leviticus 21:13, 14 makes God’s requirement perfectly clear,

“And he (the priest) shall take a wife in her virginity. A widow, or a divorced woman, or profane, or an harlot, these shall he not take: BUT HE SHALL TAKE A VIRGIN OF HIS OWN PEOPLE TO WIFE.”

ERROR: The Roman Catholic Church does just the opposite in requiring celibacy. They outright deny God’s word in the Bible. Is it any wonder that almost 50% of the so-called priests are homosexual, pedophiles, or both! Preachers today are required to be married; also included are the deacons of the church. (Read 1 Timothy 3:2,12).

C. God’s priests offered blood sacrifices. In Leviticus 16:6, the priest was to...

“...offer his bullock for the sin offering, which is for himself, and make an atonement for himself, and for his house.”

Read the rest of Leviticus 16, as it describes the priest offering the blood sacrifice of the slain goat; and the releasing of the live goat into the wilderness.

ERROR: Have you ever seen a Roman Catholic priest obeying God and doing this? Truly, these so-called priests, occupying a position manufactured by their organization, fulfill

VI. Catholicism & Lutheranism

what Titus is describing in 1:16,

“They profess that they know God; but in works they deny him, being abominable (Gr. “boelussoie,” to be rotten and to stink.), and disobedient, and unto every good work reprobate.”

D. The priest’s clothing was designed by God. Read Exodus, Chapter 28, and tell me if you have ever seen a Roman Catholic priest obey God’s word and dress as God told him to dress?

E. God’s Old Testament priesthood was to function until Israel’s Messiah, the Lord Jesus Christ was crucified, buried and risen from the dead. The priest functioned in the office of the priesthood, teaching the Jewish people God’s laws. When Christ came and paid for our sins on the Cross, the Old Testament law and the priesthood ended. Romans 10:4 clearly states,

“For Christ is the end of the law for righteousness to every one that believeth.”

The Present: Christ is the only priest today. Upon Christ’s death,

“...the veil of the temple was rent in twain from the top to the bottom...” - Matthew 27:51

showing us that,

“...we (Christians) have a great high priest, that is passed into the heavens, Jesus the Son of God, let us hold fast our profession.” - Hebrews 4:14

The Book of Hebrews shows the contrast between the Old Testament priest ministering under the Old Covenant, made at Mount Sinai, and our High Priest, the Lord Jesus Christ, ministering and making intercession today for us because of the New Covenant made upon Mount Calvary. Hebrews 8:1 tells us that...

“...We (Christians) have such an high priest, who is set on the right hand of the throne of the Majesty in the heavens.”

When the veil was rent, it was showing us that the Old

VI. Catholicism & Lutheranism

Testament priesthood had ceased, with its priests offering the blood of the animal sacrifices.

“But Christ being come an high priest of good things to come...Neither by the blood of goats and calves, but by his (Christ’s) own blood he entered in once into the holy place, having obtained eternal redemption for us.” - Hebrews 9:11,12

1. Christ’s priesthood has never been transferred to the Roman Catholic Church or any so-called clergyman. Any church claiming the office of priest is totally fictitious and diametrically opposed to the word of God! Notice Hebrews 7:24,

“But this man (Christ), because he continueth forever, hath an unchangeable priesthood.”

The Greek word for “unchangeable” is “aparabatos.” It only appears once in the Greek New Testament and literally means “untransferable.” In other words, the Lord Jesus Christ is our High Priest; and has never changed; or transferred his Priesthood to any person, or church, as falsely claimed by the Roman Catholic Church.

2. Christ only can forgive sins, not the Roman Catholic priest. When we sin after becoming a Christian, we are to confess our sin to Christ, NOT the priest. Notice 1 John 1:8,9,

“If we (Christians) say that we have no sin, we deceive ourselves, and the truth is not in us. If we confess our sins, he (Jesus Christ) is faithful and just to forgive us our sins, and to cleanse us from all unrighteousness.”

Notice. It is Jesus Christ we confess to; and it is Jesus Christ who forgives, NOT the Roman Catholic priest. I, personally, have asked many priests who they confess to when they sin? Some I could not get to admit that they do sin. A few have told me they confess to God. My next question to them was, “Why do you not teach the people to do the same thing as you do? Why do you put yourself in between man and God as a mediator, when the Bible says,

VI. Catholicism & Lutheranism

“Let us therefore come boldly unto the throne of grace, that we may obtain mercy, and find grace to help in time of need.” - Hebrews 4:16

It does not say “Come unto the priest for absolution.” The priests give their people a false security and a confidence that is deceitful, by drawing the spiritually ignorant to themselves; instead of directing them to Jesus Christ.

3. Christ is the only Mediator or Intercessor.

“For there is one God, and one mediator between God and men, the man Christ Jesus.” - 1 Timothy 2:5

Notice Romans 8:34,

“...It is Christ that died, yea rather, that is risen again, who is even at the right hand of God, who also maketh intercession for us.”

How sad when people put their trust in a religious system; instead of the Savior, the Lord Jesus Christ. Yes, the false priests and teachers will continue, as we are told in Hebrews 10:11 with a warning,

“And every priest standeth daily ministering and offering oftentimes the same sacrifices, which can never take away sins.”

The Future: All Christians, from the New Covenant made by Christ’s death and Resurrection until the Rapture, have been positionally given the title and position of kings and priests.

“...Unto him (Christ) that loved us, and washed us from our sins in his own blood (5b) And hath made us kings and priests unto God and his Father;...(6)” (Revelation 1:5b,6).

Literally, from the day of Pentecost until the Rapture, every Christian makes up the spiritual Body of Christ known as the Church (Ephesians 2:16), the Body (1 Corinthians 12:13), the Bride (Revelation 19:7 & 21:9), the Building (Ephesians 2:20,21) and the One New Man (Ephesians 2:14,15).

In 1 Peter 2:5 every Christian, collectively, is referred to as,

VI. Catholicism & Lutheranism

“...an holy priesthood, to offer up spiritual sacrifices, acceptable to God by Jesus Christ.”

In Verse 9, Peter states again the priesthood of all the saved.

“But ye are a chosen generation, a royal priesthood, an holy nation, a peculiar people...”

The question is, “WHEN are Christians of the Church Age going to occupy their future position as kings and priests?” The answer is given in Revelation 5:10,

“And hast made us unto our God kings and priests: and we shall reign on the earth.”

This is when Christ sets up the earthly Kingdom for a 1,000 years. At the Rapture, all Christians disappear from the Earth and go to be with Christ. (1 Thessalonians 4:13-18). Then follows the 7-Year Tribulation Period, which culminates with Christ returning to the Earth. We accompany Christ’s return; and will assume our position and authority as kings and priests as allocated to us by Christ, Himself. Revelation 20:6 makes this clear.

“Blessed and holy is he that hath part in the first resurrection: on such the second death (i.e., the Lake of Fire) hath no power, but they shall be priests of God and of Christ, and shall reign with him a thousand years.”

1 Corinthians 6:2 also sheds some light on this.

“Do ye not know that the saints (Christians) shall judge the world? (i.e. during the Millennium) and if the world shall be judged by you, are ye unworthy to judge the smallest matters?”

Notice in Verse 3,

“Know ye not that we shall judge angels...”

These are the angels that followed Satan, now known as demons and unclean spirits.

The Conclusion: The Roman Catholic priesthood is a manufactured priesthood to perform religious and traditional practices. They in no way follow the Old Testament priesthood

VI. Catholicism & Lutheranism

which has ceased with Christ. Christ is our High Priest and His position has never been relinquished to any man or church. In the Millennium, every Christian will be appointed by Christ as to where he will judge the Earth as a king and priest. But, notice, only Christ is called the High Priest, and that position is never given to us as Christians.

In 1 Peter 2:5 we are called a “holy priesthood”; and, in Verse 9, Christians are collectively called a “holy nation.” The only reason I know for being called “holy” is because the holiness, or righteousness of God is placed to our account the moment we trust Jesus Christ as Savior. 2 Corinthians 5:21 makes this clear.

“For he hath made him to be sin for us, who knew no sin; that we might be made the righteousness of God in him.”

Read Philippians 3:9.

“And be found in him, not having mine own righteousness, which is of the law, but that which is through the faith of Christ, the righteousness which is of God by faith:”

9. Why Has My Lutheran Friend Never Heard of The Rapture?

Question: I have been talking to a friend of mine about the Rapture. He was raised in the Lutheran Church (ELCA) and confirmed; but, has never heard his church mention the Rapture. Do you have any idea why, since they claim to believe the Bible?

Answer: I cannot speak for every sect, or splinter group, that call themselves Lutheran. I have written and obtained the literature from three of their major denominations; being, the Missouri Synod, the Wisconsin Synod, and the Evangelical Lutheran Churches of America (ELCA). Their writings clearly state that none of the three believe in the Rapture.

They also do not believe in the literal restoration of the Nation of Israel; nor do they believe the promises of Christ

VI. Catholicism & Lutheranism

setting up the Kingdom for 1,000 years here on the Earth, when He returns to judge the nations at the end of the seven-year Tribulation.

They spiritualize hundreds and hundreds of Scriptures throughout the Bible that prophesy, literally, these coming events.

This is the problem that arises when you establish a denomination upon a man such as Martin Luther, or any other man. Therefore, the views of the man are indoctrinated in people, instead of a personal study of the Word of God by themselves.

Personally, in studying the life and teachings of Martin Luther I am amazed at what he *did not believe* concerning the Bible. Along with denying the Rapture, Israel's Restoration as a nation, and the Kingdom Reign of Christ on Earth for a 1,000 years; he also did not believe the Book of Revelation should be in the Canon of Scriptures. This is because he did not believe it would ever be possible for these things to be fulfilled. He also could never reconcile the Epistle of James with the Book of Romans; therefore, labeling the Epistle of James the "Epistle of Straw."

In Luther's Large Catechism, he states that

**"But I am baptized! And if I am baptized, I have the promise that I shall be saved and have eternal life, both in soul and body."
(Luther's Large Catechism, P. 86).**

He continued on Page 87 by stating...

"Further, we are not primarily concerned whether the baptized person believes or not, for in the latter case, Baptism does not become invalid."

He further states very plainly that...

"Baptism is valid, even though faith be lacking... Baptism does not become invalid even if it is wrongly received or used, for it is bound not to our faith, but to the word."

This clearly contradicts the Word of God in John 3:36 which states:

VI. Catholicism & Lutheranism

“He that believeth on the Son hath everlasting life: and he that believeth not the Son shall not see life: but the wrath of God abideth on him.”

Clearly, Martin Luther believed that Baptism is *essential* for eternal life. It is sad to say, but the majority of Lutherans I have talked with have no idea what Luther did and did not believe! Luther is as much a god to the Lutherans, as the Pope is to the Catholics!

A few years back, a young lady and her husband came to our home. She attended our church, but her husband, who had been raised a Lutheran, wouldn't come. While visiting in their home, he had many questions; and, during the conversation trusted Jesus Christ as his Savior. He had been baptized and confirmed in the Lutheran Church; but, was lost on his way to Hell until that night when he trusted Christ as his Savior.

A few weeks later he was killed in a car accident. When I arrived at the hospital, his parents already had the Lutheran preacher there. All were in the waiting room and, as I began to relate to them about Matt accepting Christ, thinking it would be a comfort to them, his parents got up and very disgustedly left the room.

The deceased's parents overruled the wife in having the Lutheran preacher conduct the funeral, since they had raised him a Lutheran. I asked the Lutheran preacher if he would tell those at the funeral about Matt's trusting Jesus Christ as his Savior. At the funeral he talked about how Matt was a salesman and so was Jesus. His whole message centered on "Remember "Matt's baptism." Never once did he mention that Matt had received Jesus Christ as his Savior.

I thank the Lord we could retrieve another soul from the grips of Luther's philosophy of Baptism for salvation. Matt's salvation was based on God's word, as he understood and believed Ephesians 2:8,9,

VI. Catholicism & Lutheranism

"For by grace are ye saved through faith; and that not of yourselves: it is the gift of God: Not of works, lest any man should boast."

10. *Should We Pray for Someone After Their Death?*

Question: My husband, a Christian, passed away some time ago. Should I continue to pray for him?

Answer: In answer to your question, I am not aware of any Scripture that even hints of praying for a Christian after they are departed from this life. May I ask you, what would you pray for concerning your husband? Paul, in 2 Corinthians 5:8, assures all Christians that,

"We are confident, I say, and willing rather to be absent from the body, and to be present with the Lord."

Then, in Verse 1 we are told,

"For we know that if our earthly house of this tabernacle (our bodies) were dissolved (died), we have a building of God, an house not made with hands, eternal in the heavens."

The works your husband did for the Lord, while living, accompany him to Heaven and he will be rewarded for them. Notice Revelation 14:13,

"And I heard a voice from heaven saying unto me, Write, Blessed are the dead which die in the Lord from henceforth: Yea, saith the Spirit, that they may rest from their labors (i.e., done while living); and their works do follow them."

On the other hand, many preachers give a false peace and comfort to people, telling them what they want to hear. I have been to funerals of people that I have personally witnessed to about Jesus Christ and how to have eternal life; and they wanted nothing to do with the Bible, or Jesus Christ. But at the conclusion of the eulogy, the preacher makes a statement like, "May God rest his soul in peace." So comforting to the listeners; but, a million miles away from the truth! The truth is, this person's soul

VI. Catholicism & Lutheranism

will never rest in peace; but, will suffer torment in the Lake of Fire for all time and eternity.

I remember watching the funeral of John Belushi on television. This man OD'd on cocaine and heroin. Some of his acts and vocabulary were filthy; yet, the preacher said at the end of the graveside service, "May God rest his soul in peace."

I also recall going to a Lutheran funeral. The deceased was married and had children. He worked construction and was out of town on a job. In a bar one night...which involved another woman; and her boyfriend, or ex-boyfriend, shot the man. At the funeral I couldn't believe what I heard the preacher say! His words were, "He was living out his baptism." He said nothing about accepting Jesus Christ as your Savior. Since this organization believes baptism is essential for salvation, the preacher stated what the people wanted to hear. This is job security—not eternal security in Christ!

The vigils and prayers given for a person after they are deceased are absolutely meaningless. In John 3:36 the Bible states that,

"He that believeth on the Son hath everlasting life: and he that believeth not the Son shall not see life; but the wrath of God abideth on him."

Revelation 20:15 states,

"And whosoever was not found written in the book of life was cast into the lake of fire."

God makes it perfectly clear that no amount of money or prayers can get you out of Hell, if you die without Christ. Psalm 49:7 tells us that,

"None of them can by any means redeem his brother, nor give to God a ransom for him."

For you, Mrs. _____, I comfort you with the knowledge that your husband is in the presence and care of our wonderful Savior, the Lord Jesus Christ. This is the peace you

VI. Catholicism & Lutheranism

can have, along with knowing you will see him and never again be separated. Please notice the words of Christ in John 14:27...

"Peace I leave with you, my peace I give unto you: not as the world giveth, give I unto you. Let not your heart be troubled, neither let it be afraid."

VII. Church Procedures

1. *Is It Right to Use Real Wine for Communion?*

Question: Some churches use grape juice for the Lord's Supper, or Communion, and some use real wine. Which is right?

Answer: This question has been asked by many and God's Word gives the answer. In Proverbs 20:1 we are told concerning strong drink...*"Wine is a mocker, strong drink is raging: and whosoever is deceived thereby is not wise."*

According to *Strong's Exhaustive Concordance*, "wine" here is the Hebrew "yayin" and is "fermented wine." Since God warns against the use of fermented wine, our Savior would not then serve it at the Last Supper. Matthew 26:29, Mark 14:25, and Luke 22:18, all refer to the drink used at the Last Supper as "the fruit of the vine," which is grape juice, not fermented wine.

Notice in Matthew 26:27-28,

"And he took the cup, and gave thanks, and gave it to them, saying, Drink ye all of it." (v.27).

This symbolized His blood that was to be shed upon the Cross for you and I.

"For this is my blood of the new testament, which is shed for many for the remission of sins." (v.28).

His life that He was about to give as a ransom for our sins was not intoxicating, but "*a sweet-smelling savour*" symbolized by the sweet fruit of the vine (grape juice.)

This is further substantiated by the prohibition of drinking fermented wine by the priests serving in the Tabernacle of the Lord in Old Testament. This is made clear in Leviticus 10:9,10 (also refer to Ezekiel 44:21)

"Do not drink wine (fermented, same Hebrew word as "wine" in Proverbs 20:1) nor strong drink, thou, nor thy sons with thee, when ye go into the tabernacle of the congregation, lest ye die: it shall be a statute forever throughout your generations:"

VII. Church Procedures

"And that ye may put a difference between holy (sweet grape juice) and unholy (fermented wine), and between unclean and clean."

No, fermented wine is not to be used in the church.

It is amazing how many practices are performed, clothed with a religious atmosphere; BUT, diametrically opposed to the clear teaching of God's Word. Notice the warning in Leviticus 10:9, "lest ye die." How dead and empty human philosophy, religion, and tradition leave a person; BUT, the Christian is alive by adhering to the Word of God!

2. *Is the Celebration of Easter in the Bible?*

Question: I found "Easter" in Acts 12:4 and nowhere else in the New Testament. Where did the celebration of Easter come from?

Answer: The word "Easter" in Acts 12:4 is a mistranslation. The Greek word is "PASCHA" and should have been translated "PASSOVER," as it is in the other 28 places it appears in the New Testament.

The *International Bible Encyclopedia* says concerning Easter: "The English word (Easter) comes from the word "estera," a Teutonic goddess, to whom sacrifice was offered in April, so the name was transferred to the Paschal (Passover) feast. The word does not properly occur in Scripture...There is no trace of Easter celebration in the New Testament."

We have no objection to anyone remembering a special day of the year in commemoration of Christ's Resurrection. Our church commemorates it also. The value being, there will be many people attending the Easter service that otherwise do not attend church.

It is a wonderful opportunity to present to those who are lost, how much Christ loved them and suffered for them by going to the Cross. He suffered the "Hell" of crucifixion to pay for our sins; so we would not have to spend an eternity in Hell paying

VII. Church Procedures

for our own. He was then resurrected, assuring us that he had power over death (Hebrews 2:14,15), and that God had accepted His payment for the sins of the world. John 5:24 gives this assurance of eternal life to anyone who will receive it by faith.

"Verily, verily, I say unto you, He that heareth my word, and believeth on him that sent me, HATH EVERLASTING LIFE, and shall not come into condemnation; but is passed from death unto life."

As Christians, we thank our wonderful Savior every day, not just on Easter; that 2,000 years ago He left the glories of Heaven and counted it a joy (Hebrews 12:2) to go to the Cross and be crucified for you and me. Since no one ever loved us like Jesus Christ, then "How can I do less than give Him my best? After all he's done for me?"

3. What About Women Pastors?

Question: What is your opinion of women teaching in the church, say an adult mixed Sunday School class? I think some people get the impression, supposedly from the Bible, that women are to remain quiet in church. Also, what about women pastors?"

Answer: Opinions don't matter. What does God say IN THE BIBLE about this? In 1 Timothy and Titus, God gives some guidelines for behavior in the church (1 Timothy 3:15). One of the guidelines is that the woman is not to teach the man nor to "usurp" the man's authority to teach in the church. (1 Timothy 2:11,12). To "usurp" something is to take a position that is not yours. I believe Sunday School is a part of the church, and an adult man is a *man*. According to 1 Timothy 2:11,12, a woman should not teach this class.

Further, a "bishop" or pastor must be "the husband of one wife" (1 Timothy 3:2). This is a male requirement. Deacons must be male. In 1 Timothy 3:1-13, where it gives the requirements for pastors and deacons, note the use of the male pronouns "he," and

VII. Church Procedures

"his". Note particularly Verse 5, where it says "For if a man". (See also Titus 1:5-9). Where God is specific, He means what He says!

Any woman who claims that God called her to be a pastor, is a liar! She has lied about God. She has lied to herself, and hopes the church will believe her lie also. There are no women preachers ordained of God.

I am sorry to disappoint the ladies; but, the Bible teaches that pastors must be men. A woman in that position is a "usurper," taking something that was not given her by God. They can teach the women and children, NOT adult men. (Titus 2:3-5). I do think the God who wrote the Bible, who sees the past and the future, could foresee the changes in custom of today. Customs may change, but God's Word ... never!

Heaven and earth shall pass away, but my words shall not pass away." - Matthew 24:35

On the positive side, I don't know what we would do without the women of our church. They teach Sunday School, visit the sick, clean, paint, teach ladies' Bible studies and pray. Our potluck suppers are a sight to behold, thanks to the women!

4. Should We Practice Foot Washing Today?

Question: What is the significance of foot washing and are we to practice it today?

Answer: In John, Chapter 13, the washing of feet was a custom and tradition of that time. Just as greeting one another with a "holy kiss" was in Romans 16:16, as Paul was greeted by those who loved him (Acts 20:37). 1 Corinthians 11:5,6 describes a woman having her head covered in public, as it was the custom to do so. If her head was not covered, she was considered a prostitute. Some of these customs are still practiced in a few countries today. In America, the hand shake is a custom replacing the "holy kiss" of the Orientals. In traveling, paved roads and cars have replaced walking and animal travel from

VII. Church Procedures

town to town on dirty, dusty roads. Shoes and socks have replaced sandals and bare feet in our travels.

Our Lord is addressing the disciples in this passage and is going to use the custom of foot washing as a very important object lesson to his followers. In fact, there are several lessons taught in this narrative that are important and must not be overlooked. May we examine a few of these object lessons.

1. Christ's Incarnation, Humility, and Resurrection.

"He (Christ) riseth from supper, and laid aside his garments; and took a towel, and girded himself." (V.4)

"Supper" represents fellowship, such as Christ had at the Throne of God and with all the heavenly host of Heaven—perfect peace, perfect love, and perfect fellowship! He arose from the throne of His glory, laying aside His garments of glory, and came to this stench-filled Earth.

"He took a towel, and girded himself,"

...illustrates to us that He was "God manifest in the flesh" (1 Timothy 3:16), clothing Himself with the garment of human flesh and becoming a servant, humbling Himself even unto the death of the Cross.

Notice Verse 12, which illustrates to us Christ's humility and Resurrection.

"So after he had washed their feet, and had taken his garments, and was set down again, he said unto them, Know ye what I have done to you?"

It almost reaches the limits of our minds to comprehend that Jesus Christ, Creator of the heavens, Earth, and all mankind, would descend from Heaven; and with the humility of a lowly servant, to wash the disciples' feet. This is an example of the love Christians should have toward the lost, humbling themselves as servants of the Lord, to win the lost to Christ. Sometimes people will display a false sense of humility for self-glory. Not so with the Lord Jesus, as several hours later He

VII. Church Procedures

would prove that His humility and love for them was real. He would submit Himself to the Cross on Calvary. Philippians 2:8 makes this perfectly clear,

“And being found in fashion as a man, he humbled himself, and became obedient unto death, even the death of the cross.”

In Verse 12, after washing the disciples’ feet, we are told that He “had taken his garments.” In Verse 4, He had “laid aside his garments,” which represented His heavenly glory. Now, after His crucifixion, He takes back His garments, that is His glory, by His resurrected body. Philippians 3:20,21 explains,

“...We look for the Saviour, the Lord Jesus Christ: Who shall change our vile body, that it may be fashioned like unto his glorious body (i.e., His resurrected body).”

Next, in Verse 12, we are told that he “was set down.” Now, we know that after Christ’s Resurrection, He walked this Earth 40 days as proof that death had no power over the Son of God. Dr. Luke in Acts 1:3 states:

“To whom also he (Christ) shewed himself alive after his passion by many infallible proofs, being seen of them FORTY DAYS, and speaking of the things pertaining to the kingdom of God.”

After this, He ascended back to Heaven (Acts 1:11) and sat down at the throne of God, as His work on Earth was finished. The Word of God states in Hebrews 1:3,

“...when he (Christ) had by himself purged our sins, sat down on the right hand of the Majesty on high;”

Verse 12, “Know ye what I have done to you?” In other words, "Do you understand the real meaning of what I have done? Can you spiritually see ahead that all of this points to the Cross and the Resurrection? Can you not see that in humility and humbleness I went to the Cross for every sinner?" Romans 5:8 sums it up:

“But God commendeth his love toward us, in that, while we were yet sinners, Christ died for us.”

VII. Church Procedures

This is Christ's plea to every individual, "Can you not see what I have done for you?" Wouldn't it be wonderful if every lost person would be conscious of their condition and want to be saved. Just as the Philippian Jailer, who cried out,

"What must I do to be saved?"

Paul and Silas responded,

"Believe on the Lord Jesus Christ, and thou shalt be saved."

2. Peter's Confusion About Fellowship. (John 13:5-8).

Jesus had begun to wash the disciples' feet and then he came to Peter. Impetuous Peter blurted out immediately,

"Lord, dost thou wash my feet?"

Peter was in limbo and seemed to have no idea why Christ was washing their feet. Yes, he was familiar with the custom of being kind and generous in washing the feet of a traveler who had walked a long distance. But, here, the disciples had been sitting with Christ at the "Last Supper." He may also have wondered why Jesus wanted to wash their feet instead of the disciples washing His feet. Nevertheless, Peter maintained his insistence that Jesus would not wash his feet. Here are Peter's words in Verse 8.

"Thou shalt never wash my feet."

...he declared. Peter, like some of us, think at times we know more than the Lord does. In Verse 7, we have the Lord's answer to Peter.

"Jesus answered and said unto him, What I do that knowest not now; but thou shalt know hereafter."

I remember an incident which happened while I was returning home from work late one night many years ago. I turned on the radio and happened to be tuned in to a "religious" program, the "World Wide Church of God" with Herbert W. Armstrong. After listening to this false teacher a few minutes, I

VII. Church Procedures

told the Lord that He ought to kill this false prophet as he was sending thousands of people to Hell with his works salvation message. The Lord spoke to me by the Holy Spirit, saying, “Max, since you are that concerned, I would like for *you* to tell them the truth.” It was as though the Lord was riding in the passenger’s seat. I didn’t see Him bodily; but, I sure heard Him audibly.

The Holy Spirit spoke to my conscience saying, “ I want you to be a pastor and I want you to prepare yourself in Bible College.” I remember telling the Lord that I didn’t see any reason for Him to “get personal” about that situation; and, as for me, I would never bring the subject up again! I kept my word, but the Holy Spirit was relentless! A short time later, we sold our home and off to Bible College we went! That’s been 40 some years ago and all of those years we have been on the radio continuously.

Looking back on that time, I couldn’t understand how the Lord would want someone as unqualified as me. I can relate to the words Jesus told Peter,

“What I do thou knowest not now; but thou shalt know hereafter.”

Now, after being a Christian for 45 years and a pastor for 35 years, I can look back and understand what I didn’t understand then. Now, God’s Word in 1 Corinthians 1:26,27 helps me understand what I didn’t understand all those years ago.

“For ye see your calling, brethren, how that not many wise men after the flesh, not many mighty, not many noble, are called: (26) But God hath chosen the foolish things of the world to confound the wise; and God hath chosen the weak things of the world to confound the things which are mighty.(27)”

Let us return to Verse 8, where Jesus addresses Peter after his refusal to have his feet washed by the Lord.

“...Jesus answered him, If I wash thee not(i.e., his feet), thou hast no part with me.

“No part” is speaking of fellowship, not Sonship; com-

VII. Church Procedures

munion, not union.

The feet of the travelers, as they walked in their sandals would collect the dust and dirt of the road. At day's end, before bedding down for the night, it was a real display of love and care for someone to refresh them by washing their feet. This physical act was to illustrate a spiritual truth. Just as the traveler's feet pick up the dirt of the road, so it is with the Christian.

Sometimes a Christian's feet will take him where he shouldn't go. Maybe he directs his feet to attend more boy scout meetings or school board meetings, than to attending his church's services (meetings). His secular activities have dominated his time. No time to teach a Sunday School class, be on the deacon or trustee board, sing in the choir, or help with the Awana Club or youth groups. The secular has replaced the spiritual. This Christian doesn't need to be saved all over again; as he never got "unsaved" to begin with. What he lost was his fellowship with the Lord—not his salvation! What caused this man to utilize all of his time for the secular things is described by Christ in John 12:43,

"For they loved the praise of men more than the praise of God."

James tells us in 4:17,

"Therefore to him that knoweth to do good, and doeth it not, to him it is sin."

This Christian has sinned by putting the secular ahead of the spiritual; therefore, he has a false balance in his life. Proverbs 11:1 describes his condition,

"A false balance is abomination to the Lord: but a just weight is his delight."

1 John 1:7-9, tells the Christian how to recapture the fellowship that was lost. First, he is to be honest with himself and quit justifying his sin. Verse 8 is very explicit,

"If we say we have no sin, we deceive ourselves, and the truth is not in us."

VII. Church Procedures

Second, he is to confess his sin, that is agreeing with the Lord that what he is doing is wrong, as Verse 9 explains

“If we confess our sins, he is faithful and just to forgive us our sins, and to cleanse us from all unrighteousness.”

Third, he is to *stop* what he is doing and *start* putting the Lord first in obedience to God’s word as described in Verse 7,

But if we walk in the light (i.e., the word of God), as he is in the light, we have FELLOWSHIP one with another, and the blood of Jesus Christ his Son cleanseth us from all sin.”

Whatever sin, or sins, we as Christians commit daily, needs to be acknowledged, confessed, and forsaken for forgiveness to maintain fellowship with the Lord. This is the lesson that Christ was teaching the disciples and Peter by the washing of their feet.

3. Christ Exposes Judas, the Counterfeit Christian, As He Teaches a Lesson of Discernment.

Christ told Peter in John 13:10c,11, that one among them was not saved.

“...ye are clean, (i.e., saved) but not all. For He (Christ) knew who should betray him; therefore he said, ye are not all clean.”

Read verses 18-30 where Christ exposes Judas as a counterfeit Christian. This is a practical lesson for every Christian to exercise discernment. 1 John 4:1 says,

“Beloved, believe not every spirit (i.e., person), but try the spirits whether they are of God; because many false prophets are gone out into the world.”

These are Satan’s missionaries as described in 2 Corinthians 11:13-15,

“For such are false apostles, deceitful workers, transforming themselves into the apostles of Christ.(13) And no marvel: for Satan himself is transformed into an angel of light.(14) Therefore it is no great thing if his ministers also be transformed as the ministers of righteousness...(15)”

Matthew 7:21 explains that

VII. Church Procedures

“Not every one that saith unto me, Lord, Lord, shall enter into the kingdom of Heaven.”

Satan will infiltrate your life, family, and church with false teaching to deceive you, if he can do it. Matthew 10:16 says

“...be ye therefore wise as serpents, and harmless as doves.”

Every false cult will project a works salvation including such things as baptism, confirmation; or just being a good person by keeping the 10 Commandments, and etc. This is in opposition to God’s word in Ephesians 2:8,9,

“For by grace are ye saved through faith: and that not of yourselves: it is the gift of God. Not of works, lest any man should boast.”

The way a Christian should handle a false teacher is given in Romans 16:17,18,

*“Now I beseech you, brethren, **MARK THEM** which cause divisions and offences contrary to the doctrine (i.e., the word of God) which ye have learned; and **AVOID THEM**. (17) For they that are such serve not our Lord Jesus Christ, but their own belly; and by good words and fair speeches deceive the hearts of the simple (18).”*

4. The Last Object Lesson Is Showing Christ’s Finished Work as Revealed in John 13:12.

“So after he had washed their feet, and had taken his garments, and was set down again, he said unto them, Know ye what I have done to you.”

You will recall in Verse 4 that Christ “laid aside his garments” which represented leaving His glory in Heaven and coming to this Earth, clothed with sinless human flesh (the Virgin Birth) to pay for the sins of the world. Christ’s last words on the Cross were,

“...It is finished: and he bowed his head, and gave up the ghost (i.e. spirit).” - John 19:30

After three days and three nights he clothed Himself with his

VII. Church Procedures

resurrected body and walked 40 days (Acts 1:3; 1 Corinthians 15:3-8) as living proof He had conquered and has taken away the fear of death (Hebrews 2:14,15).

After this he assembled with them at the “*mount called Olivet*” (Acts 1:12), where He gave them His last instructions (Acts 1:4-8). Now, clothed with His glorious resurrected body, He would ascend back to the glory He had before coming to this Earth. The record is given in Acts 1:9-11:

“And when he had spoken these things, while they beheld, he was taken up; and a cloud received him out of their sight (9)” And while they looked stedfastly toward heaven as he went up, behold, two men stood by them in white apparel (10);” Which also said, Ye men of Galilee, why stand ye gazing up into heaven? This same Jesus, which is taken up from you unto heaven, shall so come in like manner as ye have seen him go into heaven (11).”

Returning to our text in John 13:12 we are told that He “sat down again.” This illustration is explained in Hebrews 1:3,

“...when he (Christ) had by himself purged our sins, SAT DOWN on the right hand of the majesty on high;”

5. Conclusion: Should We Practice Foot Washing Today?

Here are Christ’s words in Verses 14,15, after the ceremonial foot washing.

“If I then, your Lord and Master, have washed your feet; ye also ought to wash one anothers feet. (14) For I have given you an example, that ye should do as I have done to you (15).”

One must remember that foot washing, especially those of strangers, was a custom of the times. It demonstrated a person’s love, kindness, hospitality, and concern for people, other than just their family and friends. (Read Luke 7:36-50 for a very interesting account concerning this custom and what it totally revealed, as previously stated.)

Christ’s humbling Himself to wash the disciples’ feet was a two-fold lesson: practical and prophetic. Prophetically, it is described in Philippians 2:7,8,

VII. Church Procedures

“But made himself of no reputation, and took upon him the form of a servant, and was made in the likeness of men (7). And being found in fashion as a man, he HUMBLED himself, and became obedient unto death, even the DEATH OF THE CROSS. (8).”

The practical example for every Christian today, is that we humble ourselves (outside of our relatives and friends) by exhibiting friendliness, kindness, hospitality, etc.; so that we may witness to the salvation that Jesus Christ has provided for all who believe. In other words, the more we are filled with Self, there will be little room for the concern for others. John the Baptist understood this as he stated in John 3:30.

“He must increase, BUT I must decrease.”

Philippians 2:4,5 also states it well,

“Look not every man on his own things, but every man also on the things of others.(4) Let this mind be in you, which was also in Christ Jesus (5).”

No, foot washing is not a commandment for today, as we in America, have no need for such a social custom, as it was then. But we do need to put into practice the lessons Christ taught by using this ancient custom as an example. What lovely, sweet fellowship we can experience with our wonderful Savior as we walk with Him; fulfilling His will through us as described in Luke 19:10.

“For the Son of man is come to seek and to save that which was lost.”

In conclusion, I believe Proverbs 11:30,31 is appropriate for all Christians to keep in mind.

“The fruit of the righteous is a tree of life; and he that winneth souls is wise. (30) Behold, the righteous shall be recompensed in the earth: much more the wicked and the sinner (31).”

Therefore...

VII. Church Procedures

How can I do less,
Than give Him my best,
And live for Him completely,
After all He's done for me?

5. *Questions About Who Should Take Communion*

1. "Should unsaved people take communion?"

Answer: No.

2. "Should the saved who has not repented of their sins, or have something not right in their heart, partake?"

Answer: No. However, since we are not God, we cannot look into their mind and access their thinking.

"Neither is there any creature that is not manifest in his sight: but all things are naked and opened unto the eyes of him with whom we have to do." - Hebrews 4:13

3. You ask, "What is the age of accountability?"

Answer: Only God knows the age of a child that is accountable. This varies with the child. The precise time is not something you, or I, can determine. God is the only one who knows the age of accountability, since it varies with different children.

4. "If people take communion that shouldn't, what are the repercussions?"

Answer: From these questions, it appears that you want to have your pastor refuse communion to those you feel are unsaved, or in a backslidden condition.

I hope the following will help:

A. It is the pastor's responsibility to teach all present about who communion is for; and what its purpose is. It is not his responsibility to refuse to serve communion. The pastor's responsibility ended when he advised the congregation who may take communion, and who should not participate.

B. It then becomes the person's responsibility to determine

VII. Church Procedures

whether to take or not to take communion. This is not the responsibility of anyone else.

“Wherefore whosoever shall eat this bread, and drink this cup of the Lord, unworthily, shall be guilty of the body and blood of the Lord (27).

But let a man examine himself, and so let him eat of that bread, and drink of that cup(28).

For he that eateth and drinketh unworthily, eateth and drinketh damnation to himself, not discerning the Lord's body(29).

For this cause many are weak and sickly among you, and many sleep (30).

For if we would judge ourselves, we should not be judged (31).

“But when we are judged, we are chastened of the Lord, that we should not be condemned with the world. -1 Corinthians 11:27-32

3. Each person shall give an account of themselves to the Lord.

“For it is written, As I live, saith the Lord, every knee shall bow to me, and every tongue shall confess to God. (11). So then every one of us shall give account of himself to God.” -Romans 14:11-12

4. An example of the above is found in the account of the Lord's Supper given in 1 Corinthians 11:29,30.

“For he that eateth and drinketh unworthily, eateth and drinketh damnation (i.e. Greek, KRIMA, meaning “judgment.”) to himself, not discerning the Lord's body (29). For this cause many are weak and sickly among you, and many sleep (i.e. “dead”) (30).”

5. Peter, the Apostle, is a good example of someone worried about someone else. In John 21:20-22, Peter asked the Lord,

Then Peter, turning about, seeth the disciple whom Jesus loved following; which also leaned on his breast at supper, and said, Lord, which is he that betrayeth thee?(20).”

Then Peter continues questioning the Lord.

VII. Church Procedures

“Peter seeing him saith to Jesus, Lord, and what shall this man do? (21). Jesus saith unto him, If I will that he tarry till I come, what is that to thee? follow thou me. (22)”

We have all experienced the following, as recorded in one of our old, familiar songs by Ira P. Stanphill.

"I Traveled Down A Lonely Road"

“I traveled down a lonely road, And no one seemed to care.
The burden on my weary back had bowed me to despair.
I oft complained to Jesus how folks were treating me,
And then I heard Him say so tenderly.

My feet were also weary upon the Calv’ry Road.
The Cross became too heavy, I fell beneath the load.
Be faithful, Weary Pilgrim, the morning I can see,
Just lift your cross and follow close to Me.”

VIII. Christian Walk

I. *Why Do We Have Trials and Testings?*

Question: Why does God seemingly put Christians through so many trials and testings?

Answer: Remember, when God chastens a Christian for continued disobedience, it is to bring them back to where they left serving the Lord. God tests the Christian to bring them on further into maturity. No one really knows what they are worth until they are tested. A testing today will be a blessing in the future, as we learn what Christ meant when he said in Hebrews 13:5 "...I will never leave thee, nor forsake thee,," and having full assurance, knowing "...that all things work together for good to them that love God..." (Romans 8:28). A couple of examples.

Testing Number 1: Deuteronomy 8:2, the Nation of Israel.

"And thou shalt remember all the way which the LORD thy God led thee these forty years in the wilderness, to humble thee, and to PROVE thee, to know what was in thine heart, whether thou wouldest keep his commandments, or no."

The Blessing: To give them the land of Canaan where they would have more than they could want (Verses 7-10). (See also Exodus 16:4).

Testing Number 2, is the feeding of 5,000 with five loaves of bread and two sardines. Actually, there were a few thousand more. In John 6:10 there were 5,000 men. The same account in Matthew 14:21 adds "...besides women and children." Here Christ tested Phillip. Notice in Verses 5,

"...He saith unto Phillip, Whence shall we buy bread, that these may eat? And this he said to PROVE him (Phillip): for he himself (Christ) knew what he would do." (5)

Testing Number 3: Daniel and three friends, when in captivity refused to drink the king's wine or eat his provisions when they were ordered to do so. This was a tremendous testing to prove their faithfulness to God and to experience His

VIII. Christian Walk

faithfulness to them. This was a risk to their lives and those in charge of them. In Daniel 1:12, Daniel stated, "*PROVE thy servants...*" Daniel was a teenager at this time. What faith!

Every Christian is going to be tested all through his or her life. After the testing *always* comes the blessing; then look for another testing! Testings and blessings! This is part of the Christian life. Remember 1 Peter 1:7,

"That the trial of your faith, being much more precious than of gold that perisheth, though it be tried with fire, might be found unto praise and honor and glory at the appearing of Jesus Christ."

Testings in our life produce the confidence we have in Jesus Christ that,

*"I can do all things through Christ which strengtheneth me." -
Philippians 4:13*

2. *Is Suicide the Unpardonable Sin?*

Question: I have heard many times that suicide is the unpardonable sin. Does the Bible really say that?

Answer: I have heard the same for years. This claim, which is erroneous, comes from those who say "the Bible says," when they have no idea what the Bible says! The only "unpardonable sin" is the sin of unbelief. If you die without trusting Christ as Savior, your destiny is sealed in Hell.

Since I was a boy, I have heard that "Cleanliness is next to Godliness," and that it was in the Bible. I have not found that text to this day! May I suggest that you always ask for "chapter and verse" to substantiate someone's claim. The standard answer is, "I know I have read it, but I can't remember where." Tell them to go home and find it!

There are two references usually cited as regarding the "Unpardonable Sin." Matthew 12:31,32, "*blasphemy against the Holy Spirit*" and 1 John 5:16, "*There is a sin unto death.*" The Matthew text has nothing to do with suicide; but is a

VIII. Christian Walk

dispensational sin of Israel in rejecting Christ as their Messiah.

In 1 John 5:16 the last part of the verse says,

"There is a sin unto death. I do not say that he shall pray for it."

In the original this would read, *"There is sin unto death,"* as there is no Greek or Hebrew word for the article "a." This has nothing to do with suicide, but means that you should not pray for someone after they have died. As we said, their destiny is sealed, they are in Heaven or Hell depending on the decision they made while they were still living.

Usually, suicide is the result of concluding there is no way out of a situation and life must be hopeless. This can happen to a believer as well as an unbeliever. Does a Christian lose their salvation if they commit suicide? Absolutely not, as this would make God a liar when He promised EVERLASTING LIFE! Yes, suicide is a sin; but, Christ forgave all sin, including taking one's own life. Remember, before Paul's conversion he killed many Christians, yet God forgave him—taking a murderer and making him into a missionary.

3. A Note To Our Dear Readers:

The above was written to correct a doctrinal issue. Sadly, as I have said, some Christians decide life is too hard and end it all; without ever giving our precious Savior a chance to show what He can do. He has given us a promise in Hebrews 13:5,

"...I will never leave thee, nor forsake thee."

This is Christ's assurance that He will go with us through whatever life brings. We can then say, like Paul,

"...The Lord is my helper, and I will not fear what man shall do unto me." - Hebrews 13:6

Paul knew what it was to be ill, in pain, betrayed, and discouraged. See 2 Corinthians 11:23-28 for a list of Paul's hard times. Still, he believed...

VIII. Christian Walk

***"I can do all things through Christ which strengtheneth me." -
Philippians 4:13***

Friend, I can hear you saying at this moment, "Easy for you to say! I'm certainly no Apostle Paul." But you *are* indwelt by the same Holy Spirit, the Third Person of the Trinity, that Paul received his power from. And just as Satan wanted to stop the witness of the Apostle Paul, he wants to quiet the mouth of every Christian today! He can't send your soul to Hell; but, he will try to stop your testimony for the Lord, even if he has to kill you. Christ wants to give you life more abundantly. (John 10:10).

As I said, committing suicide *is* a sin. Even though it won't send you to Hell, it shows a lack of faith in our Lord's ability to care for us. "...*whatsoever is not of faith is sin.*" (Romans 14:23). It will not send us to Hell; but, will result in loss of rewards at the Judgment Seat of Christ. But God is faithful, 1 Corinthians 10:13 is a promise to us that even though we are tested, it won't be more than we can stand and *God will make the way to escape that ye may be able to bear it.*"

If you feel that life is too much, read your Bible, seek out other believers, believing pastors, or friends. Suicide is never the option, when we have the God of the Universe to call on.

"I can do all things through Christ which strengtheneth me."

Your Friend in Christ, Pastor Younce

4. *Suicide Is Not the Answer!*

Question: The question this week is a little different. I want to share with you a composite of some questions several readers of our website emailed to us sometime ago. In essence, "Dear Pastor Younce, will you pray for me. I have so many problems, family, financial, and others that seem to have no solution. I feel like God has turned his back on me and I see no reason for continuing to live my miserable life."

Answer: Dear Friend, I will surely pray for you! I must assure you that no one is helpless and hopeless if they know

VIII. Christian Walk

Christ as their personal Savior! The Bible says

*"I can do all things through Christ which strengtheneth me."-
Philippians 4:13*

Things may seem like "Life and Death" situations in the moment; but, I want to make a point. Problems are temporary, death is permanent ! What a shame to give up on the Lord just when He could be working the situation out.

It may "feel" like the Lord has forsaken you; but, in the Bible, He promised He would never do that.

"...for he hath said, I will never leave thee, nor forsake thee. So that we may boldly say, The Lord is my helper, and I will not fear what man shall do to me." - Hebrews 13:5b,6

He has also promised you will not be tested beyond what you are able to bear. Please read 1 Corinthians 10:13,

"There hath no temptation (testing) taken you but such as is common to man: but God is faithful, who will not suffer you to be tempted (tested) above that you are able; but will with the temptation (testing) also make a way to escape, that ye may be able to bear it."

Do you belong to a Bible-believing church? If you do, talk with your pastor. If you do not, immediately seek one out and talk with the pastor.

God has a purpose for your life. If He didn't, He would take us to Heaven the moment we are saved. Be sure to look up Acts 16:30,31, John 3:16, and 1 John 5:13 and believe them, if you do not already.

Do all you can to help yourself by reading your Bible, praying, talking immediately with a Bible-believing pastor. Then, forget your feelings! Leave everything in God's powerful hands,

"Casting all your care upon him, for he careth for you"- 1 Peter 5:7

The Lord's will for you is for you to have life, and "have it more abundantly." (John 10:10b).

VIII. Christian Walk

Believe me! I *am* praying for you. Suicide is not the answer!

5. ***Does Job 3:25 Mean Everything We Fear Will Come Upon Us?***

Question: In Job 3:25, was Job telling Christians that everything we greatly fear will come upon us?

Answer: I will quote Job 3:25, "*For the thing which I greatly feared is come upon me, and that which I was afraid of is come unto me.*" This verse has to be taken in context and is explained by Job 1:4,5, where we find that Job continually made sacrifices for his family, because he was afraid they might have "*sinned or cursed God in their hearts,*" and judgment might fall. This was "the thing" which Job greatly feared. We would have to say, in this, Job typified many parents of today.

Job did not know that God was *allowing* Satan to test him; as a result of which he lost his family, possessions, and health. (Job 1:6-12 and Job 2:3-6). He did not know God was going to bless him more at his latter end, than his beginning, for his faithful endurance of the trial. God gives us the "rest of the story" in Job 42:12,13.

God does not want Christians to be as worried as Job reveals himself to have been in Job 3:26, "*I was not in safety, neither had I rest, neither was I quiet; yet trouble came.*" In other words, "I worried, and trouble came anyway." What should a Christian do when he experiences the testing of Satan as described in 1 Peter 5:8? The answer is:

"Be careful for nothing (Don't worry!); but in everything by prayer and supplication with thanksgiving let your requests be made known unto God.(6) And the peace of God, which passeth all understanding, shall keep your hearts and minds through Christ Jesus." - Philippians 4:6,7

Why worry—when you can pray!

VIII. Christian Walk

6. *Is It Wrong To Have A Christmas Tree?*

Jeremiah 10:3,4

Question: Does Jeremiah 10:3,4 which says, in essence, "They cut a tree out of the forest and deck it with silver and gold" and "that these customs are vain" refer to our Christmas tree. And, do you have a tree in your church at Christmas?

Answer: This could hardly refer to Christmas as it was written over 600 years before Christ was born. This is speaking of making idols to worship; and even dressing them with clothing. (Jeremiah 10:9) Read Isaiah 40:18-20. They even called their idols "Father" in Jeremiah 2:27 where the word "stock" is an idol.

Yes, at Christmas time we have a decorated tree in our church with exchange gifts beneath the branches. It is ludicrous to think that a church and its members worship the tree! We remind our people that the star on top points to the Lord Jesus Christ, who is atop everything in this world, and is the Bright and Morning Star (Revelation 22:16). The evergreen reminds us of everlasting life; which we can have through faith in Christ's sacrificial death for us on the Cross. (2 Corinthians 5:21). The trimmings remind us of all the many blessings Christ gives us (James 1:17). The gifts beneath the tree also remind us that we should give our gift of love and kindness to others throughout the coming year.

Years ago, a man expressed his opinion we were "heathen"; because we have a Christmas tree in our church at Christmas. I suggested to him that he might practice what he preached, and cut down the evergreens in his front yard that were decked with Christmas lights. (Romans 2:1).

7. *Please Explain "Whosoever Is Born of God Doth Not...Sin"*

1 John 3:9

Question: Would you please explain 1 John 3:9,

VIII. Christian Walk

"Whosoever is born of God doth not commit sin: for his seed remaineth in him: and he cannot sin, because he is born of God."

Answer: This verse does not teach that a Christian will not sin. If this were true it would contradict 1 John 1:8 which tells us that,

"If we say we have no sin, we deceive ourselves, and the truth is not in us."

The word *commit* IS NOT the Greek word "prasso," which means "practice or keep on committing"; but, rather, IS the Greek word "poieo," which means "not to commit one single, isolated act of sin." This *seed* is the Holy Spirit which indwells every believer. Peter, in 2 Peter 1:4, declares that Christians are "*partakers of the divine nature,*" i.e., the Holy Spirit.

In Ephesians 1:13 we are told that

"...after that ye believed, ye were sealed with the Holy Spirit of promise."

It is the Holy Spirit that cannot commit one single act of sin!

Since the Christian still possesses his old nature, there will always be a conflict of wills. Galatians 5:17 explains,

"For the flesh lusteth against the Spirit, and the Spirit against the flesh: and these are contrary the one to the other..."

Therefore, the Christian is admonished to, "*grieve not the Holy Spirit*" (Ephesians 4:30); but, to "*be filled* (i.e., "controlled by") *with the Spirit*" (Ephesians 5:18), and not by the old nature. (Read Romans 8:1.)

To have eternal life, you must have the Holy Spirit. To have the Holy Spirit, you must have Jesus.

"Verily, verily, I say unto you, He that believeth on me (Christ) hath everlasting life." - John 6:47

8. *Should We Pray The Lord's Prayer Every Day?*

Question: I was told by a member of our church that every Christian should pray the Lord's Prayer, as given in Matthew 6,

VIII. Christian Walk

every day. What do you think about this?

Answer: The Lord's Prayer was given to focus our minds upon the content, as we apply it to our daily lives. We are not to just repetitiously quote the words. Matthew 6:7 makes this clear,

"But when you pray, use not vain repetitions, as the heathen do..."

Therefore, Verse 9,

"After this manner, therefore pray ye."

...has no reference to just quoting the Lord's Prayer; but applying the content to our personal life. For example:

1. In Verse 9, *"Hallowed be thy name,"* lets us know we are to reverence God's name every moment of our lives in everything we do.

2. Verse 10, *"Thy Kingdom come."* Does this mean Christ will not come unless we pray this? Of course not. Christ will come whether you and I pray or not. This does direct our minds and thoughts to always be looking for Christ's return and living for Him. 1 John 3:2,3 makes this clear,

"...When he (Christ) shall appear, we shall be like him; for we shall see him as he is... And every man that hath this hope in him PURIFIETH himself, even as he is pure."

3. Verse 13, *"And lead us not into temptation."* Just repeating these words accomplishes nothing; but praying with understanding does. That is, "Lord, please do not leave me to go my own dangerous way which exposes me to grievous pressure from the enemy of my soul; which, in a moment of weakness, might cause me to fall into great sin."

"Be careful for nothing; but in everything by prayer and supplication with thanksgiving let your requests be made known unto God." - Philippians 4:6

When *"Christ may dwell in your hearts by faith;...ye, being rooted and grounded in love (Ephesians 3:17),"* one does not have to resort to reading preprinted, stereotyped prayers. Space

VIII. Christian Walk

precludes further comment, but I hope this helps a little. Good question!

9. ***Bear Your Own Burden; Or, One Another's?***

Galatians 6:2,5

Question: Explain the "two burdens" in Galatians 6:2,5. One seems to contradict the other.

Answer: Galatians 6:2 says,

"Bear ye one another's burdens, and so fulfill the law of Christ."

Galatians 6:5 says,

"For every man shall bear his own burden."

The "burden" spoken of in Verse 2 is a heavy load or weight upon the heart when we observe another Christian overtaken in sin. We ought to be concerned enough to help that person instead of thinking, out of pride, this would never happen to me! Verse 1 explains Verse 2.

"Brethren, if a man be overtaken in a fault, ye which are spiritual, restore such an one in the spirit of meekness; considering thyself, lest thou also be tempted."

The "burden" in Verse 5 is a task or a service the Lord wants us to do for Him. For example, our church has a camp for teenagers each year. This year, the Lord laid it on my heart to go to a town 60 miles away and invite some Native American youngsters to our camp. This was a task or burden the Lord gave to me and I had a wonderful time doing it! The Lord could have given that job to someone else, but He didn't.

He burdened our Youth Director and his wife to work with teenagers. He burdened a lady in our church to cook all the meals for the camp. He burdened a young man to voluntarily keep the church yard mowed. He burdens others to help with our youth meetings and Sunday School.

Perhaps you are disabled and God has burdened you to pray for others.

VIII. Christian Walk

Actually, Verse 4 explains Verse 5.

"But let every man prove his own work, and then shall he have rejoicing in himself alone, and not in another."

10. Must We "Pursue Holiness" To Obtain Eternal Life?

Hebrews 12:14

Question: It seems to me, from Hebrews 12:14, we must pursue holiness to obtain eternal life.

"Follow peace with all men, and holiness, without which no man shall see the Lord."

I am interested to have your response.

Answer: The word "holiness" appears twice in Chapter 12, once in Verse 10 and Verse 14. Verse 10 is referring to the Christian's walk with the Lord and Verse 14 talks about our position with the Lord. The verses preceding Verse 10 tell of God chastening His children, in love, so they will show forth His holiness in their lives. The Greek word for "holiness" here is "hagiotēs." It is the abstract quality of holiness that we, as Christians, display by the power of the Holy Spirit. We are to partake of His holiness in fellowship; and show it forth in our lives; thus eliminating God's chastening.

There is a different Greek word for "holiness" in Verse 10, "hagirsmos," which means "set apart." When a person accepts Jesus Christ as their personal Savior, they are indwelt with the Holy Spirit which is the perfect holiness and righteousness of God. We are then set apart as His children. Romans 8:9 makes this clear.

"Now if any man have not the Spirit of Christ, he is none of his."

You cannot follow something you do not already have.

In Verses 5-8, God reminds the Christians they are still His sons (used 5 times); even though He is chastening them for their sins. The flesh cannot "*produce peace with all men* (i.e. those who hate you, lie about you, etc.) *and holiness*"; only the Holy

VIII. Christian Walk

Spirit can do this. Therefore, no person without the Holy Spirit
"shall see the Lord."

We are to yield to the Holy Spirit as 2 Timothy 2:22 says.

"Flee also youthful lusts: but FOLLOW righteousness, faith, charity, peace, with them that call on the Lord out of a pure heart."

One cannot follow the Holy Spirit unless you *have* the Holy Spirit!

11. Why Do Children Suffer?

Hebrews 13:5,6,

Question: After reading Hebrews 13:5,6, I couldn't help but wonder; why then are there so many children starving, hurt, and abused? I love the Lord, but still have a hard time with the pain of children.

Answer: Let's quote the passage in question:

"Let your conversation be without covetousness; and be content with such things as ye have: for he hath said, I will never leave thee nor forsake thee. So that we may boldly say The Lord is my helper, and I will not fear what man shall do unto me." - Hebrews 13:5,6

These verses in Hebrews are for Christians, not the lost. Because of sin, ungodliness, and cult religions, we have atrocities committed against children and adults. God loves little children and instructs the parents to raise their children *"up in the nurture and admonition of the Lord."* (Ephesians 6:4). In Luke 18:16, Jesus said,

"...Suffer (allow) little children to come unto me, and forbid them not: for of such is the kingdom of God."

Jehovah's Witnesses will let a baby, or child, die by refusing to allow a blood transfusion, should it be necessary to save a child's life.

God loves little children and expresses His anger against

VIII. Christian Walk

those that mistreat these little ones in Matthew 18:6,

"But whoso shall offend one of these little ones which believe in me, it were better for him that a millstone were hanged about his neck, and that he were drowned in the depth of the sea."

We thank the Lord we have an eternal home in Heaven to go to where,

"And God shall wipe away all tears from their eyes; and there shall be no more death, neither sorrow, nor crying, neither shall there be any more pain: for the former things are passed away." - Revelation 21:4

12. Why Did Christ Say, "Turn the Other Cheek?"

Matthew 5:39

Question: In Matthew 5:39, Christ said "Do not resist an evil person. If someone strikes you on the right cheek, turn to him the other also." I don't understand what He meant?

Answer: In Matthew, Chapters 5 through 7, the "Sermon on the Mount," Christ used several simple object lessons for our understanding.

"Resist not evil." in Matthew 5:39, simply means "do not retaliate to harm the person who hates you." There is nothing wrong with being angry when someone lies about you, etc. Ephesians 4:26 says,

"Be ye angry and sin not: let not the sun go down on your wrath."

We wouldn't be normal if we didn't get angry; but, we are not to sin by letting the anger cause us to attempt harm towards our adversary. Neither should we let it fester in our minds for weeks and months. In other words, stay away from the person! Romans 12:19 tells us,

"Dearly beloved, avenge not yourselves, but rather give place unto wrath: for it is written, Vengeance is mine; I will repay, saith the Lord."

VIII. Christian Walk

(Also read 1 Corinthians 5:11; 2 Corinthians 6:14-17; 2 Thessalonians 3:6,14,15).

Notice, in Matthew 5:29,30, we are not to literally "pluck out our eye"; or we would all be blind. Nor are we to cut off our hand, literally; or we would all be walking around with stubs! If we are enticed to sin with something we are looking at, then pluck our eye out from looking in that direction; and look elsewhere. The same with our hands. Withhold it from whatever bad thing we are thinking of doing with it.

Read the rest of Matthew 5. It reveals that we are to love by not retaliating with hatred to do harm. It takes a mature Christian to do this. Sometimes we have to ask God for strength to love the unlovable! The word "perfect" as given in 5:48 means "mature." We have to remember that our Lord also suffered unjustly.

"For Christ also hath once suffered for sins, the just for the unjust, that he might bring us to God, being put to death in the flesh, but quickened by the Spirit:"- 1 Peter 3:18

13. Is Forgiveness Without Trust Really Forgiveness?

Question: This question came up in my Bible study last night. If I forgive a person but do not trust that person, have I really forgiven them?

Answer: When we compare "forgiveness" to "trust" we are not comparing equals. Forgiveness is an unconditional act, performed on the basis of what Christ has done for us, as we see in Ephesians 4:32. Romans 5:8 lets us know,

"While we were yet sinners, Christ died for (or forgave) us."

We are to forgive even when the offender perhaps has not apologized and is still offending; or has done some really terrible thing to ourselves or our family. But, are we to continue to allow ourselves, our family, or our ministry to continue in harm's way. No! This is where trust is revealed.

Paul had a situation in his life and he warns his "*son in the*

VIII. Christian Walk

faith," Timothy, about it in 2 Timothy 4:14-18.

"Alexander the coppersmith did me much evil: (Paul does not seek revenge): the Lord reward him according to his works. (14)"

He warns Timothy in Verse 15,

"Of whom be thou ware also; for he hath greatly withstood our words.. (Look out! Don't be trusting!)"

In Verse 16, Paul reveals that when he attempted to defend his cause, no one stood with him. However, he does not hold that against them,

"...I pray God that it may not be laid to their charge".

In Verse 17, Paul reveals where trust should be placed,

"...the Lord stood with me...and I was delivered out of the mouth of the Lion."

Here, I think Paul is referring to Alexander the coppersmith with a bit of humor. Verse 18 shows that Paul wasn't really worried.

"And the Lord shall deliver me from every evil work..."

This was just a little lesson to a young preacher.

In summary, forgiveness is unconditional; but, trust is earned through observable, trustworthy actions on the part of the one forgiven. Our Lord, Himself, in Matthew 10:16,17a lets us know we're not on a "walk in the park."

"Behold, I send you forth as sheep in the midst of wolves: be ye therefore wise as serpents, and harmless (or innocent) as doves. But beware of men..."

You ask "If I forgive a person, but do not trust that person, have I really forgiven them? Because you have to look for signs of trustworthiness, does not mean that you have not forgiven them. Their part is to be trustworthy. Trust has to be earned.

VIII. Christian Walk

14. *Can the Soul and Spirit Be Separated?*

Question: Hebrews 4:12 says,

"For the word of God is quick, and powerful, and sharper than any two-edged sword, piercing even to the dividing of the Soul and the Spirit and of the joints and marrow, and is a discerner of the thoughts and intents of the heart."

Can you tell me how the Word of God can divide the soul and spirit?

Answer: From the word of God we know the soul is the seat of man's emotions and appetites, i.e., his desires. The spirit is the seat of man's understanding and intelligence. (1 Corinthians 2:11; Job 32:8). No doctor, surgeon, psychiatrist, etc., has ever been able to locate the soul and spirit within a person. Yet, the brain, that mass of tissue in our skull, receives instructions from our soul and spirit. The brain, with its trillions of neurons and neurotransmitters, then directs the body to react to the desires and emotions of the soul as the spirit directs.

May I illustrate. A young man and girl are dating. They are attracted to each other, and drawn closer and closer by their feelings. Their flesh wants intimacy; but the Word of God says "No!" to adultery. The Word of God comes to their minds sharply and seeks to SEPARATE their emotions, appetites, and lusts of the soul, FROM the spirit. The spirit could say, "Go ahead, it's all right."; or, "You had better listen to the Word of God and say "No." In other words, the Word of God steps in and seeks to SEPARATE the spirit from saying "Yes" to our emotions; and leading our spirit to say "No" to our emotions, as directed by the Holy Spirit and the Word of God.

Another illustration may suffice. A man and a woman are dating and become very much in love. The man treats her like no other ever has. He is very polite, constantly praises her for everything. He is loving, gentle, kind, exactly the kind of husband she has always dreamed of. There is only one problem. She is a Christian and he is an Atheist! Finally he proposes and waits for her answer. Her emotions, desires, and feelings say

VIII. Christian Walk

"Yes!"; BUT, being raised in a Christian home, the Word of God comes to mind. The Holy Spirit is reminding her of 2 Corinthians 6:14.

"Be ye not unequally yoked together with unbelievers: for what fellowship hath righteousness with unrighteousness? and what communion hath light with darkness?"

Immediately, the Holy Spirit, using the Word of God, summons her to withdraw from this relationship. This is a powerful blow, piercing to the core of her conscience, or her "heart." (Romans 2:15). Remember, the Holy Spirit, by bringing the Word of God to her mind, seeks to SEPARATE the young lady's spirit from following the emotions, appetites, and feelings of her soul. This would cause her to say "Yes!" to God's Word by breaking off the relationship, which will later lead to disaster.

Haven't we all, at some time or another, followed our feelings and emotions, instead of God's Word...and, later, wished we had listened to the Lord?

"There is a way which seemeth right unto a man, but the end thereof are the ways of death." (Proverbs 14:12).

15. Do You Have To Turn From Your Sin To Be Saved?

Ezekiel 18:21-23:

Question: I am confused by an Old Testament passage, Ezekiel 18:21-23, that seems to say that you must turn from your sin to be saved.

Answer: The best way to seek your answer is to begin by quoting the passage in question.

"But if the wicked will turn from all his sins that he hath committed, and keep all my statutes, and do that which is lawful and right, he shall surely live, he shall not die. (21) All his transgressions that he hath committed, they shall not be mentioned unto him: in his righteousness that he hath done he shall live. (22) Have I any pleasure at all that the wicked should die? saith the Lord GOD: and not that he should return from his ways, and live?" - Ezekiel 18:21-23

VIII. Christian Walk

Turning from your sin will not save you. It is believing that Jesus Christ died to pay for your sin that gives you eternal life. No one was ever saved by keeping the Law, as it only showed us we were sinners in need of a Savior. Romans 3:20 is emphatic on this point,

"Therefore by the deeds of the law there shall no flesh be justified in his sight: for by the law is the knowledge of sin."

We are all born sinners, because each person inherits the sin nature of Adam. (Romans 5:12). The only means of redemption is,

"Being justified freely by his grace through the redemption that is in Christ Jesus:" - Romans 3:24

Strictly applied, Ezekiel 18:21-23 is a warning to a person, in Old Testament times, who was being disobedient to the Law, to come back to its statutes and obey the Lord. "...do that which is lawful and right, he shall surely live, he shall not die." If he does so, God will not chasten, "he shall surely live, he shall not die." God will forgive, "All his transgressions that he hath committed, they shall not be mentioned unto him."

This has nothing to do with salvation; but, teaches obedience to the Lord. However, the Apostle Paul states of the Old Testament Scriptures in Romans 15:4, "...whatsoever things were written aforetime were written for our learning..." This is the same principle for having fellowship with our Lord that is reiterated in the New Testament in 1 John 1:7,8,9.

16. What Does "Whosoever shall save his life shall lose it, " Mean?

Question: I don't understand what is meant in Matthew 16:25 which says:

"For whosoever shall save his life shall lose it: and whosoever will lose his life for my sake shall find it."

Answer: Verses 24 to 27 are speaking of our faithfulness to

VIII. Christian Walk

the Lord, not our salvation. The Lord Jesus is showing that, if a Christian lives his life only for himself and not for the Lord, it will be a totally wasted life. Now, Verse 25,

"For whosoever will save his life (i.e., live only for his own pleasure) shall lose it:"

He will lose all the blessings, happiness, eternal rewards, etc. which he could have had from serving the Lord.

"and whosoever will lose his life for my sake" (My life is hidden in Christ, He is first in my life.) shall find it."

I, then, find out how exceedingly life is worth living when I put Christ first.

In Verse 26, Christ contrasts gaining the world and wasting your life.

"For what is a man profited, if he shall gain the whole world, and lose his own soul? (RSV translates "forfeit his life) "or what shall a man give in exchange for his soul?" (RSV, "in return for his life).

Remember, the words "soul" and "life" are from the same Greek word.

In Verse 27, Christ promises "and then he shall reward every man according to his works."

As we pointed out, this passage (Matthew 16:24-27) is speaking of our service to the Lord after we are saved, not as a condition to be saved.

17. Is It a Sin to Play Cards on Sunday?

Question: We have two children, 12 and 14. Many times we play cards and watch a church program on TV. I was taught that gambling and playing cards on Sunday was a sin. Also, can you tell us what age is too old to make your kids go to church? What is your opinion and can you give us any Bible verses that will help? Mr. & Mrs. _____ .

Answer: As long as your children are in your home and

VIII. Christian Walk

under your care, they are to accompany you to church. Grown children living at home are another issue. You and your wife should attend church regularly, as it is commanded in Hebrews 10:25.

"Not forsaking the assembling of yourselves together, as the manner of some is; but exhorting one another: and so much more, as ye see the day approaching."

Both of you should be setting the example as Ephesians 6:14 admonishes,

"And ye fathers, provoke not your children to wrath: but bring them up in the nurture ("discipline") and admonition of the Lord."

Your two children are to

"...obey your parents in the Lord: for this is right." (Ephesians 6:1).

Playing cards is only a game and gambling is not specifically prohibited, in the Bible. Playing cards on Sunday or any other amusement, when you should be in church, is a sin. James 4:17 clarifies this.

"Therefore to him that knoweth to do good, and doeth it not, to him is SIN."

With all the attendant evils which accompany casino gambling, it cannot be a good thing to train your children toward. 1 Thessalonians 5:21,22 says,

"...hold fast that which is good. Abstain from ALL appearance of evil."

Children's card games, OK. Poker, Blackjack, etc., No!

The most important thing to know is that you, your wife, and children have all accepted Jesus Christ as their personal Savior and have the peace of knowing they have everlasting life. (John 3:16). The second most important thing is to adhere to the Lord's will for your family, as recorded in Titus 2:11,12.

VIII. Christian Walk

"For the grace of God that bringeth salvation hath appeared to all men...Teaching us that, denying ungodliness and worldly lusts, we should live soberly, righteously, and godly, in this present world."

18. *How Can I Know God's Will?*

Question: How can I know the Lord's will for my life?

Answer: Wouldn't it be wonderful if the Lord would send you a letter from Heaven telling you that He wanted you to be a pastor, missionary, youth director, music director, deacon, etc.? But, such is not the case. This is not the easiest question to answer. From thirty years experience, there appear to be some universal applications that may be applied to those whom the Lord has, or is leading, into specific avenues of His service.

First, if you are fully committed in serving the Lord in your local church and still seem to be unsatisfied, or have an emptiness within, it is very likely the Lord wants you to prepare yourself for leadership responsibility in the avenues He leads you into.

A number of years ago, a young man, a trustee in our church, came to me and said he thought the Lord was calling him into the ministry as a pastor. He wanted some advice. I asked him if he wanted to be a pastor, and he said, "No." I told him, since it was not his will, then it must be the Lord's will; or he wouldn't have thought about it. Since he wanted more evidence, I remember praying with him in the following manner, "Dear Lord, in the next few months make everything go badly in this young man's life."

After a couple of months, he came back saying that he was headed to Bible college to prepare for the ministry, as that was the worst two months he had experienced in his life. He moved his family to Florida, finished four years of Bible college and was the founding pastor of a church where he had previously lived.

The late Dr. Walter Wilson, founder of the Kansas City

VIII. Christian Walk

Bible College (Kansas City, Missouri), gave this simple formula for following God's leading:

1. Is there a need?
2. Will I be happy?
3. Is it scriptural?

When I felt God was calling me to the ministry, I wrote a 3-page letter to one of the great Bible teachers that I knew, a professor in the college I eventually attended. I was expecting a long letter in return explaining how I could know if this was God's will for me or not. When I received the letter it contained nothing more than, "How can you doubt the calling unless you have the calling?"

"Woe is unto me, if I preach not the gospel." - 1 Corinthians 9:16

That answered my question, and it now became a matter of submitting to or rejecting God's leading. I hope you will make the same decision I did.

"...Lord, thy will be done." - Matthew 6:10

19. What Does the Bible Say About Men Wearing Earrings?

Question: I see so many men and boys wearing earrings anymore, it makes me wonder if there is anything in the Bible about this, pro or con?

Answer: Yes, there are several references in the Bible concerning earrings. One reference, where there appears to be nothing wrong with a woman wearing bracelets or earrings is found in Genesis 24. Abraham had sent his servants out to find a wife (Rebekah) for his son, Isaac. Upon finding her, they gave her an earring and bracelets for her hands. (Genesis 24:22,30,47). The references including men wearing earrings are almost universally associated with idolatry, heathen worship, immorality, homosexuality, etc. Here are some examples:

1. When Jacob was backslidden he went and dwelt in Shalem, a city in Canaan. (Genesis 33:18,19). This caused a lot

VIII. Christian Walk

of trouble, as his family got mixed up with the heathen. (Genesis 34). God met him and told him to go back to Bethel. (Genesis 35:1). Jacob's household and all that were with him were now worshipping false gods and dressing like the heathen. Here are Jacob's words:

"And Jacob said unto his household and to all that were with him, Put away the strange gods that are among you, and be clean, and CHANGE YOUR GARMENTS. (2) And they gave unto Jacob all the strange gods which were in their hand, and all their (men and women) EARRINGS which were in their ears..." - Genesis 35:2,4

2. In Exodus 32, earrings are also associated with worshipping false gods, being worn by the wives, daughters, and SONS. In Exodus 32:1,2 the people said,

"...Make us gods,...as for this Moses,... we wot not what is become of him. (1)" And Aaron said unto them, Break off the golden earrings, which are in the ears of your wives, of your SONS, and of your daughters, and bring them unto me(2)."

How many young men we see today who are wearing earrings, nose rings, and attaching ornaments to their pierced tongues, lips, eyelids, breast and navels.

In Isaiah 3:20 the word "earrings" comes from a Hebrew word which is a prime root and means "to whisper, implying a spell as a magician; also a charmer or enchantment." This is nothing more than demonism. As you read in Isaiah from Chapter 2:5 to Chapter 3:26, you will find that the people of Israel had forsaken God (2:6); they were lofty and filled with pride (2:12). They were idol worshippers (2:18,20); and many were homosexuals and lesbians (3:9).

Today, this revived practice appears again in the "Hippie" movement of the 60's and 70's; with their godless hard rock music, liquor, sex, and drugs. A person's thinking is revealed by the way they present themselves in their talk, mannerisms, and the way they dress. God's instruction to the Christian is found in Romans 12:1,2,

VIII. Christian Walk

“...that ye present your bodies a living sacrifice, holy, acceptable unto God, which is your reasonable service. And be not conformed to this world: but be ye transformed by the renewing of your mind, that ye may prove what is that good, and acceptable, and perfect, will of God.”

20. *What Does The Bible Say About Men Wearing Earrings?*

Asked The Second Time

Question: What about men wearing earrings, nose rings and other jewelry in their tongues, lips, eyelids, breasts, noses, etc.?

Answer: I have been asked this question often. In Judges 8, Gideon had led Israel to victory over the Ishmaelites. These were men of war (the Ishmaelites) and were wearing golden earrings. Gideon’s army had taken these from their “prey.” Notice Verse 24,

“And Gideon said unto them, I would desire a request of you, that ye would give me every man the earrings of his prey. (For they had golden earrings, because they were Ishmaelites.)”

From Psalm 83:1-6 we learn that the Ishmaelites were enemies and haters of God (Verse 2). They hated God’s people, Israel (Verse 3), and they wanted to destroy them as a nation (Verses 4,5). Here, again, earrings are worn by men who want nothing to do with God or His people.

Another very interesting account of men wearing earrings is recorded in the Book of Job, Chapter 42. After all Job’s adversity, testings and trials,

*“...The LORD gave Job twice as much as he had before.” (10)
THEN CAME there unto him all his brethren, and all his sisters,
and all they that had been of his acquaintance before...” (11a)*

The question we ask is, Why did not his so-called acquaintances, and his brothers and sisters come to comfort Job for the Lord during his trials when he needed their encouragement; instead of waiting until they were over and God had doubly blessed him? It appears they thought the God Job

VIII. Christian Walk

worshipped was an evil god. God records their thoughts as Verse 11 continues,

“...And they bemoaned him, and comforted him over all the evil that the LORD had brought upon him...”

Their comfort was not God-centered; but, only sympathy for Job for the “evil his God had done to him.” Isn’t it interesting they never made mention or praised the true Jehovah God for blessing Job doubly after his trials. The reason is...Job’s brothers and sisters were unbelievers!

Since Job’s brothers, sisters, and friends were unbelievers, this accounts for why Job interceded and prayed continually for all his sons and daughters. (Job 1:2,5). He, no doubt, was afraid of the influence his unbelieving brothers and sisters might have on his sons and daughters when he wasn’t present. This is why he,

“...offered burnt offerings according to the number of them all: for Job said, It may be that my sons have sinned, and cursed God in their hearts.”

WHY? Because of his God-denying brothers, sisters, and other acquaintances. Now, back to Job 42:11 where Job’s brothers and sisters brought him, “*every one an earring of gold.*” Once more we have men also wearing earrings who are unbelievers.

There is nothing wrong that we find with women using cosmetics with a right motive. 1 Timothy 2:9 says,

“In like manner also, that women adorn (Greek “kosmeo,” our English “cosmetics”) themselves in modest apparel...”

And, of course, we must also mention the possibility of men and women engaging in the popular pastime of "cross-dressing."

“The woman shall not wear that which pertaineth unto a man, neither shall a man put on a woman’s garments: for all that do so are abomination unto the LORD thy God.” (Deuteronomy 22:5).

VIII. Christian Walk

21. Does Galatians 5:17 Say Christians Can't Help But Sin?

Question: My question concerns Galatians 5:17.

“For the flesh lusteth against the Spirit, and the Spirit against the flesh: and these are contrary one to the other: so that ye cannot do the things that ye would.” (i.e., by the old nature.)

When it says that “ye *CANNOT* do the things that ye would;” does this mean, as a Christian, that I cannot sin?

Answer: The Greek word for cannot is “me”, pronounced “may.” It is a prime particle of qualified negation, not an absolute. Therefore, the correct translation would be “should not,” instead of “can not.”

Let us see an example of how the word “cannot” is used in the absolute sense. Notice Galatians 3:17,

“And this I say, that the covenant, that was confirmed before of God in Christ, the law, which was four hundred and thirty years after, CANNOT disannul, that it should make the promise of none effect.”

The English “cannot” is from a different Greek word, “ouch,” which is in the absolute sense. Another example is found in 1 Corinthians 15:50,

“Now this I say, brethren, that flesh and blood CANNOT inherit the kingdom of God...”

Here again the Greek word for “cannot” is “ouch” in the absolute sense. In other words, “cannot” (Greek “ouch”) in Galatians 3:17 and 1 Corinthians 15:50 is absolute; which means there are no alternatives or exceptions to what is stated in these verses.

As the different Greek words, “me” in Galatians 5:17 and “ouch” in Galatians 3:17, and 1 Corinthians 15:50, were translated by the same English word, “cannot”; this is what has caused the confusion.

Christians can *always* prevent themselves from fulfilling the desires of the flesh. They can seek to be controlled by the Holy Spirit, which indwells us at the moment of salvation (Ephesians

VIII. Christian Walk

1:13,14) or by “walking in the Spirit” as it is explained in Galatians 5:16.

“This I say then, Walk in the Spirit, and ye shall not fulfill the lust of the flesh.”

I hope this clarifies your question. You may check this out for yourself in a *Strong’s Concordance* or *Vine’s Expository Words in the Greek New Testament*.

22. Is There Such A Thing As Sinless Perfection?

Question: A friend of mine told me that she has progressed in her Christian life so much, that she does not sin anymore. Is this Biblically correct, or not?

Answer: The only sinless perfection the Christian has is what they receive upon trusting Jesus Christ as their Savior. At salvation, Christ give the believer His righteousness as stated in 2 Corinthians 5:21,

“For he hath made him to be sin for us, who knew no sin: that we might be made the righteousness of God in him.”

Also in Philippians 3:9 we are told,

“And be found in him, not having mine own righteousness, which is of the law, but that which is through the faith of Christ, the righteousness which is of God by faith.”

Positionally, or eternally speaking, the believer has the righteousness of God given to him. Practically, the believer is indwelt and sealed with the Holy Spirit at salvation (Ephesians 1:13); but, still has the old Adamic nature to contend with. Galatians 5:17 makes this perfectly clear,

“For the flesh lusteth against the Spirit, and the Spirit against the flesh: and these are contrary the one to the other; so that ye cannot (Greek reads “should not”) do the things that ye would (i.e., by the old nature).”

1 John 1:8 contradicts your friend’s claim of arriving at her

VIII. Christian Walk

perfect state, or “sinless perfection.”

“If we say that we have no sin, we deceive ourselves, and the truth is not in us.”

Her intentions may be well; but, she has deceived herself by her own self righteousness.

As we look to the Word of God, we find that the word “perfect” in the King James Translation has led some Bible students to conclude that believers can live without committing any sin whatsoever. Some go as far as to claim they have eradicated the old nature; therefore, it is *impossible* for them to sin! Let us briefly examine the word “perfect.” The Greek word for “perfect” is “teleios.” The verb form is “teleioo.” These Greek words intend something quite different from “sinless perfection.” As we shall see, these Greek words emphasize “maturity”; or, “that which is full grown.” In writing to the Corinthians, the Apostle Paul stated in 1 Corinthians 14:20,

“Brethren, be not children in understanding: howbeit in malice be ye children, but in understanding be men.”

The Greek word for “men” is “teleios.” Therefore, it is evident that this verse is contrasting the difference between children and adults, the immature and the mature. In 2 Peter 3:18 the Christian is expected to...

“...grow (i.e., into adult maturity) in grace, and in the knowledge of our Lord and Savior Jesus Christ...”

Now, notice in Hebrews 5:14 where we have a form of the same Greek word.

“But strong meat belongeth to them that are of full age, even those who by reason of use have their senses exercised to discern both good and evil.”

Here the Greek word is translated “*of full age*,” which emphasizes maturity. Therefore, the Christian who is able to exercise their senses in discerning the difference between good and evil is a spiritually mature Christian.

VIII. Christian Walk

In James 1:3,4, the English word “perfect” is used twice in Verse 4.

*“Knowing this, that the trying of your faith worketh patience. (3)
“But let patience have her perfect work, that ye may be perfect
and entire, wanting nothing (4).”*

Both of the words translated “perfect” in Verse 4 are forms of the Greek “teleios.” James is emphasizing to the Christians what the end product of patience produces. In other words, the testing of our faith works patience, which will result in a spiritually mature, well-rounded Christian.

Only when this sinful body dies and we have been freed to join our wonderful Savior in Heaven (2 Corinthians 5:1-4), will we experience sinless perfection. But, concerning our life down here, 1 John 1:8,10 state so clearly; that to be a spiritually mature Christian, I must evaluate myself in the light of the Word of God, so as not to be deceived.

“If we say we have no sin we deceive ourselves, and the truth is not in us. (8) If we say we have not sinned, we make him a liar, and his word is not in us (10).”

The Christian is to be “perfect” in the sense of behaving as a spiritually mature adult in their talk and walk. Romans 12:1,2 is God’s will for His children.

“I beseech you therefore, brethren, by the mercies of God, that ye present your bodies a living sacrifice, holy, acceptable unto God, which is your reasonable service. (1) And be not conformed to this world: but be ye transformed by the renewing of your mind, that ye may prove what is that good, and acceptable, and perfect, will of God.”

23. Does God Really Care If We Give To His Work; Or Not?

Question: Does God Really Care If We Give to His Work, or Not?

Answer: “Yes.” God really cares. There are consequences for keeping all that God has blessed you with for yourself.

VIII. Christian Walk

Deuteronomy 8:1-20 gives the whole context of God's viewpoint on this matter. We shall consider the main points, God warned the People of Israel about, before they entered the Promised Land,

"For the Lord thy God bringeth thee into a good land, a land of brooks of water..." - Deuteronomy 8:7a

"Beware that thou forget not the Lord thy God, in not keeping his commandments, and his judgments, and his statutes, which I command thee this day." - Deuteronomy 8:11

"Lest when thou has eaten and art full, and hast built goodly houses and dwelt therein. And when thy herds and thy flocks multiply, and thy silver and thy gold is multiplied,...Then thine heart be lifted up, and thou forget the Lord thy God..." - Deuteronomy 8:12-14a

"And thou say in thine heart, My power and the might of mine hand hath gotten me this wealth. But thou shalt remember the Lord thy God: for it is he that giveth thee power to get wealth..." - Deuteronomy 8:17,18a

"...if thou do at all forget the Lord thy God, and walk after other Gods, and serve them, and worship them (giving to the false Gods the sacrifices and offering due to God in appreciation for all His blessings),...ye shall surely perish." Deuteronomy 8:19

In other words, God is telling the people of Israel, "I brought you here, I have blessed you with this land and I will bless you in this land. You could not have gone through the 40-year wilderness journey; nor received this land, if I had not been with you. You did not do it with your own power. If you do not keep my commandments (including the tithe); and, even worse, give what is due to me to a false God (which could include yourself), judgment is going to fall!

Deuteronomy 28:1-68. God gave further instructions to Moses for Israel before they entered the Land. Moses addressed them in a valley between Mt. Ebal and Mt Gerazim, rehearsing God's instructions to the Nation.

Deuteronomy 28:1,2,

"And it shall come to pass, if thou shalt hearken diligently unto the voice of the Lord thy God, to observe and to do all his

VIII. Christian Walk

commandments (including tithes and offerings) which I command thee this day...all these blessings shall come on thee and overtake thee, if thou shalt hearken unto the voice of the Lord thy God.”

1. God is warning the 12 Tribes that He will bless obedience and curse disobedience!

Deuteronomy 28:3-14 lists all the blessings God would pour out upon the nation of Israel, if the people would obey! Deuteronomy 28:15 to the end of the chapter lists all the curses which would befall them, if they did not obey!

Some of the bad things which would befall Israel if they were not obedient.

Deuteronomy 28:33 & 36 refer to a nation which shall “eat up” their land and “bring thee and thy king which thou shalt set over thee (Israel was not yet even in the land, and had never had a king at this time.), unto a nation which neither thou nor thy fathers have known.... This is a reference to the carrying away of the wicked king of Judah, Zedekiah, and all the captives; the destruction of the Temple and Jerusalem in the first years of the 70-Year Captivity. (2 Chronicles 36:15-21). Jeremiah 25:12 gives the length of the Captivity.

Deuteronomy 28: 49-57, refer to Assyria, who took the 10 Northern Tribes captive in approximately 721 B.C.

“The Lord shall bring a nation against thee from far, from the end of the earth, as swift as the eagle flieth, a nation whose tongue thou shalt not understand. (49) A nation of fierce countenance, which shall not regard the person of the old, nor shew favor to the young. (50)”

In 1 Kings 17:4-23 we have the account of the sins of the 10 Northern Tribes, who were besieged by Assyria for three years and then taken captive. Assyria’s armies were noted for their great cruelty. As God says in 2Kings 17:18,

“Therefore the Lord was very angry with Israel (The Ten Northern Tribes), and removed them out of his sight: there was none left but the tribe of Judah only.”

VIII. Christian Walk

God used the nation of Assyria to render judgment against the Ten Northern tribes, or “Israel.” God warned this would happen before there ever was a split of the Twelve Tribes into the two kingdoms.

Deuteronomy 28:63-68 refers to a world-wide dispersion. The primary fulfillment happened in 70 A.D. when Titus and the Roman Army sacked Jerusalem and scattered the remnant of Jews still in the country of Israel.

Some 37 years before the sacking of Jerusalem and dispersion of Jews, the Lord Jesus observes some rich men casting their gifts into the treasury of the temple and then a “certain poor widow” casting in her two mites, (1 Mite = 1/8 Penny). Our Lord comments,

“...this poor widow hath cast in more than they all (the rich): For all these have of their abundance cast in unto the offerings of God: but she of her penury (poverty) hath cast in all the living that she had.”(Luke 21:3,4).

Of course, we know the greatest sin of the Nation of Israel at this time was that they did not receive the Lord Jesus Christ as their Messiah,

“He came unto his own, and his own received him not.” (John 1:11).

The complete fulfillment will occur during the Tribulation Period when the Anti-Christ will seek to destroy every Jew he can lay his hands on. You cannot say that God did not warn the whole Nation of Israel of the consequences of disobedience to his commandments. (Daniel 9:27; Matthew 24:15-21). Israel always had a choice.

*“...if thou shalt hearken unto the voice of the Lord thy God.”
(Deuteronomy 28:2b)*

2. Not Giving Tithes and Offerings is “Robbing God.”
(Malachi 3:7,8).

In Malachi 2:17 the people had scornfully asked, “Will God

VIII. Christian Walk

punish us for our sins? Does He really care?" The people had disobeyed God by robbing Him of tithes and offerings. Actually, when God's people are not faithful in their giving, they not only rob God, but, they also rob themselves. God had shut off the rain and spoiled the crops because of their selfishness. (Malachi 3:11).

Tithing, or giving as God has blessed, of course, is not "making a bargain with God"; but God does promise to bless and care for those who are faithful in their stewardship. Certainly God is not bankrupt and does not really need our help! He wants our tithes and offerings as expressions of our faith and love. When a believer's love for Christ grows cold, it usually shows up in his stewardship. (1 Corinthians 4:2).

The Hebrew word "storehouse" of Malachi 3:10 is equivalent to the "lay in store" in 1 Corinthians 16:2. Since tithing is an Old Testament principle (Romans 10:4); the instruction about giving in the New Testament is that we are to bring our gifts and offerings as God has prospered us. If Christians would be faithful to give to the Lord's work as God has blessed them, there would be no Christian ministries that could not function due to lack of funds.

How should we give? Prayerfully!

"Every man according as he purposeth in his heart.."- 2 Corinthians 9:7a

We are encouraged to be cheerful givers,

"...for God loveth (or blesses) a cheerful giver."- 2 Corinthians 9:7c

We are not to give "grudgingly" or because we "have to, but, because of our love for the Lord" (2 Corinthians 9:7).

How much should we give? We should give "bountifully." Why? Because God promises to bless us bountifully. (2 Corinthians 9:6).

VIII. Christian Walk

3. A New Testament Example: Ananias and Sapphira

(Read Acts 4:32 through 5:11).

When we prayerfully “purpose in our hearts” what we should give to the work of the church, God wants us to be honest with him. (2 Corinthians 8:21). It is good that some church members do not suffer the same punishment as Ananias and Sapphira; or we would be having some strange things happening in our churches today.

It seems that Ananias and Sapphira wanted to get the reputation for being more spiritual than they actually were. When the others brought their donations (4:34-37), Ananias and Sapphira were jealous and wanted the same recognition. Ananias and Sapphira could have brought any amount they wanted, or none. (5:4).

The others, knowing they had sold their land, assumed they had brought *all* the amount, as they had done, for we are told they had “*brought the prices of the things that were sold.*” (Acts 4:34b).

However, Peter, through the Holy Spirit, knew the deception in Ananias’ mind when Ananias laid his offering at the apostles’ feet. A lesson was taught to the whole body of believers when Ananias, after being questioned by Peter, fell dead on the spot. (5:5). Ananias could have said, “My wife and I just decided we did not want to give it all.” Sapphira compounded her sin by actually lying out loud, the result of which...she dropped dead, too. The Bible again comments

“And great fear came upon all the church, and upon as many as heard these things.” Acts 5:11

We may say, “I am glad God doesn’t bring this type of punishment today.” Let us think about that. The following is true and we personally knew the individuals involved. There was a man, a certain well-off farmer, who even refused to support his missionary son on the foreign field. The son told us this, himself. The son also said his father was well able to do this; but, even

VIII. Christian Walk

though he had a hard time raising support, his son loved his father anyway and still tried to look after him in his older years; even coming back from the field under hardship and great expense to himself.

God had blessed the man abundantly and he evidently did not appreciate it. Occasionally, he was known to drop a \$5 or \$10 bill in the offering plate. Very occasionally! Usually, he never went near it! The one thing he bragged about was that he had paid for a few gallons of paint to paint a small church sanctuary because his wife's funeral was going to be held there.

According to the son, all the thousands of dollars the father had hoarded over the years went to pay the nursing home when he became infirm. Soon the money was gone, and at his death, he was a "ward of the state." They cannot even sell his home, it now belongs to the state. There it stands today, run-down, no paint, and all the bushes growing up around it. Soon, the house and barn will begin to lean; and, one day there will be nothing but a pile of splintered wood. There is no sign of that home now. It is a gaunt reminder to those who pass by. "You cannot rob God!"

"Lay not up for yourselves treasures upon earth, where moth and rust doth corrupt, and where thieves break through and steal: (19) but lay up for yourselves treasures in heaven, where neither moth nor rust doth corrupt, and where thieves do not break through and steal: (20) For where your treasure is, there will your heart be also." - Matthew 6:19-21

Yes, God does care whether we give or not. Yes! It is part of our Christian service. Everyone can give something. We would not have our jobs, finances, or health, if God had not blessed us with them. We should not think, as the 12 Tribes of Israel did,

"And thou say in thine heart, My power and the might of mine hand hath gotten me this wealth. " - Deuteronomy 8:17

As we find in 1 Corinthians 3:11-15, God blesses us with gold, silver and precious stones for service to Him. If we are not honest with him about what we can give to His work, we will

VIII. Christian Walk

receive “wood, hay, and stubble” (or loss of rewards) at the Judgment Seat of Christ. We will be saved “so as by fire”, but we will not receive a “full reward.” (2 John 1:8).

The Jewish people tithed because it was God’s Law. We give offerings to the Lord in thanks for God’s amazing grace toward us.

“For by grace are ye saved through faith; and that not of yourselves: it is the gift of God: not of works, lest any man should boast.” - Ephesians 2:8,9

Therefore, why should a Christian rob himself of God’s blessings by robbing the Lord of His offerings. God, in Malachi 3:9, reminds every Christian that is negligent in their giving,

“Ye are cursed with a curse: for ye have robbed me, even the whole nation.”

On the other hand, the Lord promises all those that cheerfully give back to Him a portion of what He has given to them the following in 2 Corinthians 9:6b, 8.

*“...and he which soweth bountifully shall reap also bountifully.”
(6b)*

“And God is able to make all grace abound toward you; that ye, always having all sufficiency in all things, may abound to every good work.”(8)

IX. Contradictions, "So-Called"

1. *How Many Blind Men Were Healed*

Matthew 20:29-34 Vs. Mark 10:45-52

Question: In Matthew 20:29-34 the Bible says Jesus healed two blind men in departing from Jericho; but in Mark 10:46-52, Mark says he only healed one blind man. Which is right? Is this a contradiction?

Answer: In studying the four Gospels you will find they give us a four-sided, composite picture of Christ and the surrounding events. One Gospel writer may give additional information from that of another. Not one Gospel writer gives all of the particularities of all the events that transpired. This disproves the false theory that one Gospel writer copied from another. Each wrote separately as the Holy Spirit inspired, directing them as stated in 2 Timothy 3:16, "*All scripture is given by the inspiration of God* (i.e., "God breathed") Also refer to 2 Peter 1:20,21.

Matthew records that Christ healed two blind men upon leaving Jericho, without naming them. Mark gives an account of the same event and evidently knew one of the men personally, as he identifies him as "*...blind Bartimaeus, the son of Timaeus...*" (Mark 10:46).

Both Matthew and Mark are complementary and each give additional information for a complete account. Matthew listed two who were healed, while Mark only gave the account of one. Mark gave the name of one that was healed while Matthew gave no names. Both are correct as each gave additional information. Matthew and Mark both state these blind men were healed as Jesus was departing from Jericho. Matthew says nothing about them begging, but Mark does.

Notice Luke 18:35-43. Here we find Luke giving an account of Christ healing a blind man as He was approaching Jericho. Note Verse 35.

IX. Contradictions, "So-Called"

"And it came to pass that as he (Christ) was come nigh unto Jericho, a certain blind man sat by the way side begging,,

So, from the three records, we have one blind man healed as Christ was approaching Jericho and two blind men healed as He is departing from Jericho. Further, He may have healed twenty-two while He was there, we do not know!

The three accounts give us a more complete picture of what transpired, none being contradictory. Also remember, it is proof that none of these writers copied from each other, as the infidels and skeptics would have you believe.

2. *Where Is This Written by Jeremiah?*

Matthew 27:9

Question: In Matthew 27:9 it says, "Then was it fulfilled that which was spoken by Jeremy the prophet, saying, and they took the thirty pieces of silver, the price of him that was valued" ... I cannot find this anywhere in the book of Jeremiah.

Answer: If you will notice carefully, the verse states it was spoken by Jeremiah. It does not say it was written.

The Gospel of John explains why it would be impossible for everything prophetic or fulfilled to have been written:

"And there are also many other things which Jesus did, the which, if they should be written every one, I suppose that even the world ITSELF COULD NOT CONTAIN THE BOOKS THAT SHOULD BE WRITTEN." - John 21:25

3. *Why Doesn't God Know the Day & the Hour?*

Mark 13:32

Question: In Mark 13:32 the Bible says, "*But of that day and that hour knoweth no man, no, not the angels which are in heaven, neither the Son, but the Father.*" I don't understand. If Christ is God, how can He not know, as God does, when His own return will be?

Answer: The answer lies in the little word "but." The Greek word translated "but" by the translators is "ei" meaning "if" and

IX. Contradictions, "So-Called"

"mi" meaning "not." The proper translation would be "neither the Son, if not the Father." This simply emphasizes the fact that... what the Father knows the Son knows, and what the Son knows the Father knows.

4. How Many Died In the Plague?

1 Corinthians 10:8 Vs. Numbers 25:1-9.

Question: Can you explain the seeming contradiction between 1 Corinthians 10:8 and Numbers 25:1-9. In 1 Corinthians 10:8 it says that 23,000 died in the plague; however, in Numbers it says that 24,000 died.

Answer: In Numbers 25:9 we are told,

"And those that died in the plague were twenty and four thousand."

This is the total amount that died in the entirety of the plague. If the man and woman who were responsible for this plague had not been destroyed, many more would have died. Please read Numbers 25:1-9 for the details.

The record Paul gives concerning this event in Numbers 25, is a warning to the Corinthians not to do the same thing. Let us read 1 Corinthians 10:8:

"Neither let us commit fornication as some of them (Numbers 25) committed, and FELL IN ONE DAY three and twenty thousand."

The answer is very simple. There were 23,000 that died in ONE DAY and 24,000 in the WHOLE plague. There would have been many more killed; if the sin had not been dealt with and the plague stopped. No contradiction.

5. Judas and The 30 Pieces of Silver

Acts 1:18 Vs. Matthew 27:5

Question: In Acts 1:18 it says that Judas purchased a field with the 'reward of iniquity'; but in Matthew 27:5 he gave the 30

IX. Contradictions, "So-Called"

pieces of silver back to the priest. How could he buy a field with the money when the Bible says he gave it back?

Answer: Please remember two things about Judas. First, he was a thief. Notice his response to Mary's anointing of Christ's feet in John 12:5,6.

"Why was not this ointment sold for three hundred pence, and given to the poor? This he said, not that he cared for the poor; but because HE WAS A THIEF, and had the bag, and bare what was put therein."

Second, he obtained the 30 pieces of silver for betraying Christ, as recorded in Matthew 26:15.

"And said unto them, What will ye give me (Judas), and I will deliver him (Christ) unto you? And they covenanted with him for thirty pieces of silver."

In Acts 1:18 we find:

"Now this man (Judas) purchased a field with the reward of iniquity..."

This field, or "homestead estate," was purchased by Judas with the money he had stolen from the treasury before he died.

The money Judas returned to the priest was used by them after his death to buy a cemetery.

"And the chief priests took the silver pieces...and bought with them (the money) the potter's field, to bury strangers in." - Matthew 27:6,7

No contradiction at all!

6. What Did David Actually Pay for the Threshing Floor?

1 Chronicles 21:25 Vs. 2 Samuel 24:24

Question: In 1 Chronicles 21:25, King David paid 600 shekels of gold for the threshing floor; but in 2 Samuel 24:24 the Bible says he paid 50 shekels of silver for it.

Answer: There is no contradiction if you read the accounts carefully. In 2 Samuel 24, David had sinned when he sent Joab to count the number of soldiers on active duty and ready to fight

IX. Contradictions, "So-Called"

(v.9). God sent a plague and killed 70,000 men (v.15).

David was told to make an altar to the Lord in the threshing floor nearby. David first bought the threshing floor ONLY.

"...So David bought the threshingfloor and the oxen for fifty shekels of silver. - 2 Samuel 24:24

Later, in 1 Chronicles 21:22, David bought the WHOLE FIELD where the threshing floor was located.

"Then David said to Ornan, Grant me the PLACE (the whole field) of the threshingfloor that I may build an altar unto the Lord."

"So David gave to Ornan for the PLACE (the whole field) six hundred shekels of gold by weight."- 1 Chronicles 21:25

The threshing floor was bought for 50 shekels of silver and the whole field for 600 shekels of gold. No contradiction!

7. Was Moses' Father-in-law's Name Jethro, or Reuel?

Question: Why does Moses' father-in-law have two different names? Is this a contradiction?

Answer: In Exodus 3:1 his name is "Jethro" and in 2:18 he is addressed as "Reuel." He is addressed as "Jethro" in nine other places and his name in the Hebrew means "His Excellence." If you will notice in Exodus 3:1, he was the priest of Midian. This name was his honorary title, representing the position he held. The name "Reuel" means "a friend of God" and was his personal name. For example, "Pharaoh" was a title given to the Egyptian kings; but it was not their personal name. It is the same with the titles "king" or "queen" of England or the "president" of the U.S. These are all representing the office they hold just as that of "Jethro," who was the priest of Midian.

The word "elohim" which is translated as "God" is found more than 2300 times in Scripture; yet, this is not the personal name of God. It is God's official title—what He is—God! The words "GOD" and "LORD" (denoted by all capital letters) in the King James translation is the Hebrew, "Jehovah." Isaiah 42:8

IX. Contradictions, "So-Called"

makes this clear,

"I am the LORD (Jehovah): that is my NAME: and my glory I will not give to another..."

Good question! No contradiction at all!

8. *Is There A Contradiction In the Size of David's Army?*

1 Chronicles 21:5 Vs. 2 Samuel 24:9

Question: In 1 Chronicles 21:5, the army is numbered as 1,100,000 men of Israel and 470,000 from Judah. The same account is given in 2 Samuel 24:9 where Israel numbers 800,000 and Judah 500,000. My atheist friend told me this proves God contradicts Himself?

Answer: In 2 Samuel 24:9 we read *"...and there were in Israel eight hundred thousand VALIANT men that drew the sword and the men of Judah were five hundred thousand men."* The key word is "valiant". The Hebrew is "chayil". The summary of the meaning of this word is, "a strong army, trained and ready for war; in other words, they are on ACTIVE DUTY."

Now notice in 1 Chronicles 21:5,

"And Joab gave the sum of the number of the people unto David. And all they of Israel were a thousand thousand and a hundred thousand that drew sword: and Judah was four hundred threescore and ten thousand men that drew sword."

These could be enlisted into active duty, if needed; but were not on active duty at this time. Notice the Hebrew "chayil", translated "valiant" and meaning on active duty is not used of this group.

2 Samuel 24:9 gives the number of soldiers on active duty while 1 Chronicles 21:5 gives the number of "reserves" that could be called up if needed.

2 Samuel 24:9 gives 500,000 for Judah; but, 1 Chronicles 21:5 gives only 470,000. Some imagine there is a contradiction here; but, it is easily explained by "reading the next verse!" 1

IX. Contradictions, "So-Called"

Chronicles 21:6 tells us, Joab did not count the men of Levi and Benjamin.

The atheist is the contradiction, not the Word of God!

Paul said in 2 Timothy 4:7,

"I have fought a good fight, I have finished my course, I have kept the faith:" - 2 Timothy 4:7

Sad to say, we have many Christians who, instead of standing on the promises, are sitting on the premises! Instead of finishing the course; they haven't even started the course, and have kept the faith all to themselves! Oh, how we need Christians to step out of the reserves to the front lines of battle in witnessing to the lost to bring them to Christ!

9. Did Israel Serve the Egyptians 400 Years, Or 430 Years?

Genesis 15:13 Vs. Exodus 12:

Question: In Genesis 15:13 the Bible says Israel shall serve the Egyptians 400 years, but in Exodus 12:41 it says they were in Egypt 430 years. Is this a contradiction?

Answer: In Genesis 15:13, God prophesied that Israel would be AFFLICTED in Egypt for 400 years. Notice carefully,

"...Know of a surety that thy seed shall be a stranger in a land (Egypt) that is not theirs, and shall serve them; and they shall AFFLICT them four hundred years."

The first 30 years in bondage, Israel was not persecuted, but as they multiplied and a new pharaoh took office, things changed. In Exodus 1:8,

"Now there arose up a new king over Egypt which knew not Joseph."

Beginning with this king and continuing for 400 years. Israel was treated as a slave and put to hard labor. Read all of Exodus, Chapter One.

Now, in Exodus 12:41 we are given the total number of years Israel was in Egypt.

IX. Contradictions, "So-Called"

"And it came to pass at the end of the four hundred and thirty years, even the selfsame day it came to pass, that all the hosts of the LORD went out from the land of Egypt."

No contradiction at all. Exodus 12 gives the total number of years in Egypt; while Genesis 15 gives the number of years afflicted. From Adam until now, the whole world has been afflicted by sin and death, but we thank God,

"For he hath made Him (Christ) to be sin for us, who knew no sin; that we might be made the righteousness of God in Him (Christ)." - 2 Corinthians 5:21

10. Did They "Hear" or "Hear Not?"

Acts 9:7 Vs. Acts 22:9

Question: At Paul's conversion in Acts 9:7 it says that the men with Paul heard the voice of the Lord also. But when Paul gives his testimony in Acts 22:9, he says *"They heard not the voice."* Is this a mistranslation? Please explain.

Answer: The answer is really very simple. The Greek word for "voice" is the same in both references. It is "phone" pronounced "fo-nay." It is also translated "noise" in Revelation 6:1 and "sound" in Matthew 24:31, John 3:8, and other places.

In Acts 9:4 Paul heard the voice and distinct words of Christ saying to him,

"Saul, Saul, why persecutest thou me?"

In Verse 7,

"And the men which journeyed with him stood speechless, HEARING A VOICE, but seeing no man."

Here they heard the sound of the voice, but could not distinguish the words as Paul did.

Now in Acts 22:7, Paul says,

"And I fell unto the ground and heard a VOICE SAYING unto me, Saul, Saul, why persecutest thou me?"

When in Acts 22:9 Paul states they heard not the voice, he is

IX. Contradictions, "So-Called"

referring to the distinct words of the voice of Christ that he heard. Did you ever hear someone talking but could not hear what they were saying? In Acts 9 the men heard someone talking. In Acts 22 they could not hear what Christ was SAYING to Paul.

One thing the whole world needs to hear and understand is that,

"God so loved the world, that he gave his only begotten Son (Christ), that whosoever believeth in him should not perish, but have everlasting life." - John 3:16

11. Did The Levites Begin to Serve at Age 25 or 30?

Numbers 4:3 Vs. Numbers 8:24

Question: In Numbers 4:3 it says that the sons of Levi who were to serve in the Tabernacle were from 30 years old to 50; but in 8:24, it states the age is from 25 to 50. Please explain this contradiction.

Answer: The tribe of Levi was given the responsibility of setting up and taking down the Tabernacle, itself, and all the articles within the Tabernacle. For example, the Ark of the Covenant, the mercy seat, the table of shewbread, the laver, the menorah, the altar of incense, brazen altar, and other things all had to be set up and taken down every time the Tabernacle was moved.

In Numbers 4:3, the age of the men was specifically fixed at 30 as being of full maturity to perform the laborious duties, as well as the mental acuity required to assist in the management of the sacred services.

Numbers 8:24, which states that the age to start their services at 25; *seems* to contradict 4:3, which states the age as 30. As one studies the Rabbinical writings and Jewish History, we find that they entered into their work or responsibilities in their 25th year.

For 5 years they were in their apprenticeship, until the age of

IX. Contradictions, "So-Called"

30. During their apprenticeship they were occasionally allowed to do the services; but, at the age of 30, they were in full-time service until the age of 50.

There is no contradiction at all. From age 25 to 30 they were being trained as pupils and probationers, under the guidance and direction of their senior brothers. At 30, they were admitted to the full discharge of their official duties.

12. David & Michal Had No Children. Who Fathered Her 5 Sons?

Question: In 2 Samuel 6:23 the Bible says that Michal, Saul's daughter and David's wife, had no children. In 2 Samuel 21:8 it says that she had five sons. Please explain.

Answer: Read 2 Samuel 21:8 very carefully. Merab was the wife of Adriel, and was Michal's sister. Michal adopted her five sons and brought up the boys under her care. Notice carefully what Verse 8 says, "*whom she (Michal) brought up* (i.e. raised up) *for Adriel.*" No contradiction at all!

13. Was the King of Gath's Name, Abimelech or Achish?

Question: In 1 Samuel 21:10 when David was fleeing from Saul, he went to *Achish*, king of Gath. But at the beginning of Psalm 34, and referring to the same event in 1 Samuel, the king's name is *Abimelech*. Is this a contradiction? Please explain.

Answer: There is no contradiction. In 1 Samuel 21, *Achish* is the king's personal name. In Psalm 34, *Abimelech* is his title of royalty, just like the Pharaoh of Egypt. *Pharaoh* was the title of the ruler of Egypt, but not his personal name. The President of the United States is the title of the office, but not the president's name. No contradiction.

IX. Contradictions, "So-Called"

14. "God Tempts No Man" Vs. "Lead Us Not Into Temptation."

Question: James 1:13 says, "God tempts no man"; but in Matthew 6:13, it says we are to ask God to "Lead us not into temptation." I am confused.

Answer: Matthew 6:13 states, "*And lead us not into temptation, but deliver us from evil...*" Here, the word "lead" is the Greek "EISPHERO" which is also translated "bring" in other places. An important little word in this text is "into." It is the Greek "EIS," a prime preposition, indicating the point reached or entered. Therefore, "Enter not INTO temptation," does not mean that I will not face temptations; BUT, with the Lord's help, I will not be a partaker by submitting and entering into the sin.

Therefore, we are praying and asking you, "Dear Lord, help us and give us strength, wisdom, and courage to resist entering into the temptation." In other words, "Dear Lord, block the way, or give me a way out; so I will not succumb to the evil temptation."

Every Christian faces temptations from the world. In 2 Corinthians 10:13 we are instructed that,

"There hath no temptation taken you but such as in common to man: but God is faithful, who will not suffer you to be tempted above that ye are able, BUT will with the temptation also make a way of escape, that ye may be able to bear (endure) it."

Now, James 1:13,14.

"Let no man say when he is tempted, I am tempted of God:...neither tempteth he any man. But every man is tempted, when he is drawn away of his own lust, and enticed."

These temptations arise from within a person from uncontrolled appetites and evil passions. (Mark 7:20-23). This is why the Lord Jesus in Luke 22:40,46 told His disciples to "*Pray that ye enter not into (be partaker of) temptations.*" In other words, when we are tempted with evil, we better start praying for help from the Lord for strength not to give in to it!

IX. Contradictions, "So-Called"

"Trial" and "temptation," basically come from the same root in the Greek. Many and varied are the Greek usages as a verb, adjective, and noun.

In response to your question, here is a very simple principle. God never tempts man to commit a particular sin. God does *test* man to see if he will obey God; so the Lord can bless him. Every time God tests man, it is for his own good—if he will only obey. The temptations to do evil come in an attempt to destroy the Christian. (Read John 10:10). Memorize Proverbs 3:5,6,

"Trust in the LORD with all thine heart; and lean not unto thine own understanding. In all thy ways acknowledge him, AND HE SHALL DIRECT THY PATHS."

15. Why Do the Books of James & Romans Seem to Disagree?

James, Chapter 2 Vs. Romans, Chapter 4

Question: In James 2, the Bible says "*faith without works is dead*"; while Romans 4 says a person is "justified by faith without works." What is the answer?

Answer: The answer is really very simple, when you remember two basic principles. First, is our justification in God's eyes; that is our salvation, given to us as a free gift; which is accepted by faith and faith alone (Ephesians 2:8,9). Second is our justification in man's eyes. A Christian may talk about his faith; but, if his life does not reflect what he says, very few will believe him. All of his talk will fall on dead ears. This is what James 2 is speaking about.

Both James and Romans use Abraham as an illustration; but, if you notice carefully, they refer to different times in Abraham's life. Notice Romans 4:3:

"For what saith the scripture? Abraham believed God, and it was counted unto him for righteousness."

This refers back to Genesis 15:6 when Abraham believed the promises God had made to him. Here is the record.

IX. Contradictions, "So-Called"

"And he (Abraham) believed in the LORD; and he (God) counted it to him for righteousness."

This is our salvation, our justification, or righteousness; which is given to us when we accept Jesus Christ as our Savior. Romans 4:5 makes it perfectly clear—salvation is by faith and not of works.

"But to him that worketh not, but believeth on him that justifieth the ungodly, his faith is counted unto him for righteousness."

No amount of good works will ever save us (Isaiah 64:6); and no amount of good works will ever *keep* us saved; since we were not saved by good works to begin with. (Titus 3:5).

Back to James, which is emphasizing our testimony for the Lord. This is our justification before man. Only when our life backs up our words will people justify what we say as being true. If a Christian has only the "talk" and not the "walk," his words will only fall on deaf ears. James states this in 2:17,18:

Even so faith, if it hath not works, is dead, being alone. Yea, a man may say, Thou hast faith, and I have works: shew me thy faith without thy works, and I will shew thee my faith by my works."

Notice carefully, James says *"I will shew thee my faith by my works."* The "thee" is another person—not God. People will only "justify" what we say if they can see it in our lives.

Abraham. James is referring to Abraham years after he was saved, when his faith was being tested with the offering up of his only son, Isaac. Here is the record in James 2:21.

"Was not Abraham our father justified by works (in man's eyes), when he offered up Isaac his son upon the altar."

James refers to Abraham's testing as recorded in Genesis 22, many years after his salvation as mentioned in Genesis 15:6 and Romans 4:3. Genesis 22:3,5 tells us there were two men with Abraham, witnessing whether Abraham would obey God or not. No doubt, over the years in Abraham's life from Genesis 15:6 to Genesis 22, he had talked of his faith in the great and marvelous

IX. Contradictions, "So-Called"

promises God had made to him. If Abraham had failed to obey God in Genesis 22, all of his talk about faith would have fallen on deaf ears to those who were watching. These men were satisfied and Abraham justified in their eyes; because Abraham walked what he talked!

The key, Romans 4 is speaking about justification in God's eyes—salvation. James is speaking about the Christian's justification in man's eyes—service or obedience. If you want others to believe what you say, your walk must be in harmony with your talk.

On this same line of distinction between salvation and service, is the distinction between two kinds of "rests" and two kinds of "peace" a Christian may experience.

16. The Christian's "Two Rests"

In Matthew 11:28 we have the first word of the sentence, "Come." This is for salvation and the rest is to anyone who will receive it.

In Verse 29, the first word of the verse is "Take." This is our service to the Lord, involving another "rest"; which is experienced by being obedient.

Salvation. Matthew 11:28, "Come," no good works—just come by faith.

*"Come unto me, all ye that labor and are heavy laden, and I will give you **REST**."*

This is the "rest" of knowing you are saved and have eternal life. (John 3:16 and 1 John 5:13).

Service. Matthew 11:29,30. "Take my yoke," service and work.

*"Take my yoke upon you, and learn of me: for I am meek and lowly in heart: and ye shall find **REST** unto your souls. For my yoke is easy, and my burden is light."*

IX. Contradictions, "So-Called"

This is an additional "rest" experienced by the Christians who are doing their best in using their lives for the glory of the Lord.

Peace With God & The Peace of God

For additional study you may want to check Romans 5:1, where PEACE WITH GOD is spoken of concerning salvation. Compare this with the PEACE OF GOD; or our service to the Lord, as found in Philippians 4:5-7.

17. Is There A Contradiction Between Acts 2:38 & John 3:16?

Or, Does Baptism Save?

Question: There is seemingly a contradiction between Acts 2:38, which says "... Repent, and be baptized every one of you in the name of Jesus Christ FOR the remission of sins,..."; and, John 3:16 which says "...whosoever BELIEVETH in him should not perish, but have everlasting life." Both can't be right! So, what is your answer to this?

Answer: The key to getting the proper understanding of Acts 2:38 is found in the little Greek word "eis", translated "for." The Greek "eis" is translated various ways in the New Testament, depending on the context and the usage of the word itself, by demonstrating basis, ground, aim, or purpose.

For example, in 1 Corinthians 2:7, "eis doxan hemon" is translated "unto our glory." (KJT). In the RSV, it is translated "for our glory." It is translated thus in demonstrating aim or purpose, that being, our glory. In Matthew 12:41, "eis" is translated "at", demonstrating the basis or grounds, that being the preaching of Jonah was the grounds for the repentance of Nineveh. "...because they repented at (or "because of") the preaching of Jonas."

A.T. Robertson, a well-known Greek Scholar, has pointed out that the Greek preposition "eis," translated "for" in the phrase "for the remission of sins," may also mean "because of." An example of this can be found in Luke 11:32, where the text says

IX. Contradictions, "So-Called"

that the people of Nineveh "...repented at the preaching of Jonas..." The word "at" is a translation of the same Greek term "eis" found in Acts 2:38. The people of Jonah's day, you see, did not repent *for* his preaching; but, *because of* it.

To quote Dr. John R. Rice, a worthy scholar, from his "Filled With the Spirit, The Book of Acts, A Verse-by-Verse Commentary": "The King James translation of Acts 2:38 '...be baptized everyone of you in the name of Jesus Christ for the remission of sins...' is unfortunate and inaccurate. The little Greek preposition eis, translated for, is an indefinite preposition of reference. It does not mean in order to. If Peter had commanded the people to be baptized in order to receive the remission of sins, he would have needed to use the Greek preposition hina, which means in order to. He did not.

This little preposition eis, used about 1,800 times in the New Testament in Greek, is variously translated, for, at, toward, unto, into, etc. So it could be translated for, as here, only in the sense of 'on the basis of,' or 'on the ground of,' so Dr. A.T. Robertson explains.

Even in English the preposition for does not necessarily mean in order to. Often for means 'on the basis of,' or 'on the ground of.' Thus one is scolded for being late, or arrested for stealing, or praised for beauty, or rewarded for bravery, or paid for work. In that sense only is one 'baptized for the remission of sins,' that is baptized for remission of sins already obtained when one repented.

Acts 2:38 does not give a new plan of salvation. Acts 10:43 says, 'To him give all the prophets witness, that through his name whosoever believeth in him shall receive remission of sins.' So John 3:36 says, 'He that believeth on the Son hath everlasting life.' So say many other Scriptures. One who trusts in Christ has, immediately, everlasting life."

With this in mind, let us return to Acts 2:38 where the Greek "eis" is translated "for" in the KJT and "unto" in the RSV. In these instances,, the Greek "eis" would be incorrectly translated

IX. Contradictions, "So-Called"

"for and "unto." The correct translation would be "BECAUSE OF," a more accurate rendering. Therefore, in Acts 2:38, "eis" is showing the "basis or grounds" for baptism, that being their remission of sins BECAUSE of their belief in Jesus Christ. This would then be in perfect agreement with all other Scripture concerning salvation.

Here is how the verse would read in its proper translation, "Then said Peter unto them, Repent, and be baptized every one of you in the name of Jesus Christ ("EIS") BECAUSE OF, the remission of sins..."

In other words, "repent" or "change your mind" about the Christ you crucified with wicked hands (hands of unbelief). (Acts 2:23). Receive Him as your Savior; then be baptized, thus publicly identifying yourself with Him in this profession of your faith. There is no contradiction between Acts 2:38 and John 3:16!

18. Did Paul Know Christ, and Then Not Know Him?

2 Corinthians 5:16

Question: I cannot seem to get the meaning out of 2 Corinthians 5:16 as the verse seems to contradict itself. Would you please give me your explanation.

"Wherefore henceforth know we no man after the flesh: yea, though we have known Christ after the flesh, yet now henceforth know we him no more." - 2 Corinthians 5:16

Answer: I believe a little background information will assist in your understanding of what Paul is expressing to the Corinthians in Verse 16. Paul describes himself before he was saved in Acts 22:3:

"I am verily a man which am a Jew, born in Tarsus, a city in Cilicia, yet brought up in this city (Jerusalem) at the feet of Gamaliel, and taught according to the perfect manner of the law of the fathers, and was ZEALOUS TOWARD GOD, as ye all are this day."

Paul believed in God, but denied the fact that Jesus was the

IX. Contradictions, "So-Called"

Messiah; i.e., God in human flesh. He viewed Jesus Christ as just another religious man trying to get a following which would undermine the Jewish religion. This is why Paul states in Acts 22:4,

“And I persecuted this way unto the death, binding and delivering into prisons both men and women.”

At this point in Paul’s life, he truly was one of those whom John spoke of in John 1:11,

“He (Christ) came unto his own (Israel), and his own received him not.”

This will change when he meets the Lord Jesus.

Acts 9 records Paul’s conversion, acknowledging Christ as God. Verses 5 and 6 state,

“...And the Lord said, I am Jesus whom thou persecutest: it is hard for thee to kick against the pricks.(5) And he trembling and astonished said, LORD WHAT WILL THOU HAVE ME TO DO?... (6)”

When Paul addressed Jesus as Lord, this was evidence that he had changed his mind about Jesus being some religious fanatic; and, he now believed he was the long-awaited Messiah, God in human flesh. (1 Timothy 3:16).

With this in mind, let us go back to 2 Corinthians 5:16. In Verses 14,15, Paul reasons with them to serve the Lord; because of what Christ extended to them in going to the Cross, and being resurrected. This is why they have eternal life and why they should serve Him.

Now, let us analyze Verse 16:

1. *“...Know we no man after the flesh...”* That is, no other human being is the Savior; only Jesus Christ, who was crucified, buried and risen again.

2. *“...Yea, though we have known Christ after the flesh...”* Notice the past tense. In other words, before they were saved they only acknowledged Christ as a mere man, but not as the Messiah.

IX. Contradictions, "So-Called"

3. *"...Yet now henceforth know we him no more..."*
Therefore, now (present tense) since we are saved, we no more recognize Christ, as just a mere man.

Basically, 2 Corinthians 5:16 describes how they viewed Christ before they were saved. Verses 17 and 18 describe how they see Christ, and themselves, since they are saved.

"Therefore if any man be in Christ, he is a new creature (creation): old things are passed away; behold, all things are become new." (17). "And all things are of God, who hath reconciled us to himself by Jesus Christ, and hath given to us the ministry of reconciliation." (18)

19. Was Crispus, Or Sosthenes, the Ruler Of the Synagogue?

Acts 18:8,17

Question: I have a question regarding Acts 18:8,17. There seems to be a contradiction, as Verse 8 says that Crispus is the chief ruler of the synagogue and Verse 17 says that Sosthenes was the chief ruler of the synagogue.

Answer: Paul was in Corinth for a year and a half ; and, no doubt, Sosthenes succeeded Crispus as chief ruler of the synagogue. There is no contradiction.

Taking into consideration the entire context of Acts, Chapter 18, here is the account. This is Paul's first visit to Corinth and *"he reasoned in the synagogue every sabbath and persuaded the Jews and the Greeks...Paul was pressed in the spirit, and testified to the Jews that Jesus was the Christ."* (Acts 18:4,5). He was immediately and violently opposed by the Jews,

"And when they opposed themselves, and blasphemed, he shook his raiment, and said unto them, Your blood be upon your own heads; I am clean: from henceforth I will go unto the Gentiles."

However, the Word of God had taken its effect,

"And Crispus, the chief ruler of the synagogue, believed on the Lord with all his house; and many of the Corinthians hearing believed, and were baptized."

IX. Contradictions, "So-Called"

Notice, baptism came after believing!

When Gallio, the new deputy of Achaia, arrived, all the unbelieving Jews took their opportunity and brought Paul before the judgment seat,

"Saying, This fellow persuadeth men to worship God contrary to the law." - Acts 18:13

They thought they would end Paul's preaching about Christ once and for all! As Paul was about to defend himself,

"Gallio said unto the Jews, If it were a matter of wrong or wicked lewdness O ye Jews, reason would that I should bear with you: But if it be a question of words and names, and of your law, look ye to it; for I will be no judge of such matters. And he drave them from the judgment seat." - Acts 18:14-16.

When the Greek bystanders saw Gallio's rude treatment of the Jews,

"...all the Greeks took Sosthenes, the chief ruler of the synagogue (who succeeded Crispus), and beat him before the judgment seat."

The Bible tells us,

"And Gallio cared for none of these things." (Acts 18:17).

The only law that Gallio cared about was Roman law.

Perhaps Sosthenes had been elected chief ruler of the synagogue because Crispus had become a Christian. His persecution came because he was a Jew and associated with the synagogue. Paul's persecution came from his bold witness for the Lord Jesus Christ. Sosthenes also may have become a believer, and when Paul left Corinth he went with him. We find in the salutation to 1 Corinthians the following greeting,

"Paul, called to be an apostle of Jesus Christ through the will of God, and SOSTHENES, OUR BROTHER, Unto the church of God which is at Corinth." - 1 Corinthians 1:1

Can we say, as did Paul,

IX. Contradictions, "So-Called"

"For I am not ashamed of the gospel of Christ: for it is the power of God unto salvation to every one that believeth; to the Jew first, and also to the Greek."- Romans 1:16

20. Explain The Discrepancy In John 19:14,16 & Mark 15:25

Question: Can you help me with a so-called discrepancy between John 19:14 and 16a,

"And it was the preparation of the passover and about the sixth (6th) hour: and he (Pilate) saith unto the Jews, Behold your King!" "Then delivered he him (Christ) therefore unto them to be crucified..."

...and Mark 15:25,

"And it was the third (3rd) hour, and they crucified him (Christ)."

John says it was the sixth hour and Mark says it was the third hour. I can't explain this!

Answer: One simple thing to remember which will clarify this so-called contradiction is this, John used the Roman time (just as we have today) and the other Gospels, Matthew, Mark and Luke, used the Jewish time.

The Roman time, divides the day from Twelve Midnight (12:00 A.M.) to Twelve Noon (12:00 p.m.) and to Twelve Midnight again. Therefore, the sixth hour in John 19:14 would be six hours from Midnight, or 6:00 A.M. in the morning. Remember, this is the time Pilate released Christ to the people *to be* crucified. He was not crucified until 3 hours later.

In Mark 15:25 we are told Christ was crucified at the third hour. Jewish time is reckoned from 6:00 P.M. to 6:00 A.M. to 6:00 P.M. The third hour from 6:00 A.M. would be 9:00 A.M. The events that took place in the three hours from the time Pilate released Christ (6:A.M.) until He was actually crucified (9:00 A.M.) are recorded in Matthew 27:26-36; Mark 15:15-25; Luke 23:25-33 and John 19:14, 16-23.

Remember, John gives the time Pilate released Christ to the

IX. Contradictions, "So-Called"

people to be crucified; and Mark gives the time he was actually crucified, being put on the Cross. No contradiction at all!

21. A So-Called Contradiction Found on the Road to Emmaus.

Luke 24:21

Question: If , as you say, the Lord arose from the grave between 3 and 6 P.M. on Saturday, how can he be found on the Road to Emmaus talking with two disciples on the “first day of the week” (Luke 24:1) which they call the “third day since these things were done?” (Luke 24:21). Is this a contradiction?

Answer: I will quote the verse you have questioned in its entirety.

“But we trusted that it had been he (Christ) which should have redeemed Israel: and beside all this, to day is the third day since these things were done.” (Luke 24:21).

Here are several important points to consider.

1. Luke uses the Jewish reckoning of time. The Jewish day was divided at 6:00 P.M., the old day ended and the new day began. As Luke 24:1 says, “*Now upon the first {day} of the week...*” (“Day”, as shown by being italicized in the text is not in the original.) “...*very early in the morning...*” What is actually in the text are the words “very early.” Some translate “early” as “dawn,” but, taken in context and comparing Scripture with Scriptures such as Matthew 28:1 and John 20:1, it should be understood as “the beginning of Sunday sometime after 6:00 P.M. on Saturday.” Therefore, we have established that Luke 24:21 occurred on Sunday, “the first of the week.”

2. The Sabbath day is always on Saturday, not Sunday. Sunday is the first day of the week. Paul gave instructions to the early Christians to “...*lay by him in store, as God had prospered him, on the first day of the week.*” Sunday! (1 Corinthians 16:2). The disciples always came together to break bread and fellowship on the first day of the week, Sunday. (Acts 20:7). This is why the majority of Christians come together in worship on

IX. Contradictions, "So-Called"

Sundays.

3. The Jewish day ran from even (evening) until even (evening). “...*from even to even, shall ye celebrate your sabbath.*” (Leviticus 23:32). The time being set at approximately 6:00 P.M.

4. The Lord Jesus had to spend 72 hours in the grave to fulfill Scripture. “*For as Jonas was three days and three nights in the whale’s belly, so shall the Son of man be three days and three nights in the heart of the earth.*” (Matthew 12:40). (See also Jonah 1:17). The Lord, Himself determines how many hours in a day, “...*are there not twelve hours in a day...?*” (John 11:9). If there are twelve hours in a day, there are twelve hours in a night. Thus, three days and three nights equal 72 hours.

5. The tomb was already empty when the first arrivals came before 6:00 P.M. on Saturday. “*In the end of the Sabbath, as it began to DAWN toward the first day of the week, came Mary Magdalene and the other Mary to see the sepulchre.*” (Matthew 28:1). The “*end of the Sabbath*” is the last few minutes before the Sabbath ends and the first day of the week, Sunday begins. “*Dawn*” is the Greek word “*epihposko*” and means “to draw on.” It was “*drawing on*” (as Luke 23:54); or approaching the first day of the week, Sunday; which actually began on Saturday at 6:00 P.M. John 20:1 also fixes the time as “*The first {“day” is italicized and is not in the original} of the week, very early, yet dark.*” This does not mean before daybreak as we think of day and night in our way of reckoning time. It is referring to “the last of the Sabbath,” 6:00 P.M. on Saturday; or 6:01 P.M. when Sunday began, being the “first of the week.”

6. There were two Sabbaths the week of the Crucifixion: the Passover Sabbath and the weekly Sabbath. Our Lord was buried between 3:00 and 6:00 P.M. on the Passover Sabbath, a Wednesday, and arose between 3:00 and 6:00 P.M. on the weekly Sabbath, a Saturday. Count backwards: Saturday 3-6 P.M. to Friday 3-6 P.M. = 24 hours. Friday 3-6 P.M. to Thursday 3-6 P.M. = 48 hours. Thursday 3-6 to Wednesday 3-6 P.M. = 72

IX. Contradictions, "So-Called"

hours.

7. They traveled to Emmaus sometime after 6:00 P.M. on Saturday (the beginning of Sunday, the first day of the week), or during the daylight hours of the next day, Sunday. Cleopas, identified in John 19:25 as the husband of one of the Marys, and another unnamed disciple were walking to Emmaus, about 6-7 miles from Jerusalem. They would not be walking on the Sabbath (Luke 23:56). They were intercepted by the Lord and walked together until they drew near to the village. (Luke 24:28). The time of day at this point was "toward evening, and the day is far spent." (Luke 24:29).

We quote the verse again. "*But we trusted that it had been he (Christ) which should have redeemed Israel: and beside all this, to day is the third day since these things were done.*" - Luke 24:21

Focusing on the words "...to day is the third day...", we find that "to day" is not the English word "today" as often assumed, but a compound of Greek words. The words "to day" are translated from the Greek word "semeron" (a combination of the article "he" and the noun "hemera"). The Greek word "semeron" means "on the (i.e. this) day (or night) current or just passed", generally, "now (i.e. at present, hitherto: this (to-) day." The Greek noun "hemera" means "day, i.e. (literally) the time space between dawn and dark, or the whole 24 hours. Figuratively, "A period of time, always defined more or less clearly by the context." (These definitions are substantiated by *Strong's Exhaustive Concordance of the Greek and Hebrew Words.*) Therefore, letting Scripture interpret Scripture, and taking the context into consideration, "...to day is the third day..." should be translated "this day just passed is the third day..."

If all Scripture agrees, you have the right answer. (2 Peter 1:20). THERE IS NO CONTRADICTION!

Are we like the two disciples on the Road to Emmaus? We want so badly to believe in our traditions of Good Friday and Easter Sunday, that we do not recognize the truth about our

IX. Contradictions, "So-Called"

resurrected Savior. *"But their eyes were holden that they should not know him."* (Luke 24:16). Should He say about us,

"O fools and slow of heart to believe all that the prophets have spoken: Ought not Christ to have suffered these things, and to enter into his glory."

Do we want to be deceived into thinking there is some saving grace in observing traditions like the "Lent," Ash Wednesday, Good Friday? Christ "suffered these things," His crucifixion on the Cross, His death, burial and Resurrection, so that he could pay for our sins.

"Believe on the Lord Jesus Christ, and thou shalt be saved..." - Acts 16:31

X. Creation

1. *What Was The Original Creation; Or How Old Is The Earth?*

Question: Science says the Earth is billions of years old. Plenty of time for evolution. What's the truth?

Answer: The Bible teaches that there were two creations. The first, or original creation, in Genesis 1:1, "*In the beginning God created the heavens and the earth.*" God makes this simple statement, as the one responsible for our Earth's creation. He does not say *when* He created it. It could have been billions of years ago, as Scientists speculate. Most do agree...the Earth is very, very old.

The "beginning" in this verse (Genesis 1:1) refers to the *original creation*.

There were other beings in existence when God laid the foundations of the Earth. All the angels were in existence, including Satan. In Job 38:4,7, God says,

"Where wast thou when I laid the foundations of the earth? declare, if thou hast understanding.(4) When the morning stars sang together and the sons of God (angels) shouted for joy.(7)"

The *first, or original*, creation of the Earth was never inhabited by man. This creation was destroyed by God, later, remodeled by God, along with its inhabitants, in six days. This was for mankind's habitation.

The word "CREATED", in Genesis 1:1, is the Hebrew "BARA," infers divine power and means "to bring into existence where nothing existed before." It is a single act of God by which the Earth came into existence all at once. God was careful to use the exact word "BARA", refuting the hypothesis about the Earth breaking off another planet, whirling in space until it cooled off, then sprouting a little speck of protoplasm!

Genesis 1:2 reads,

X. Creation

"And the earth was without form and void and darkness was upon the face of the deep..."

Genesis 1:2b states

"and the Spirit of God moved upon the face of the water."

This actually begins God's remaking the Earth for man's habitation. In this verse, the word "was" is mistranslated and should be "became." The same Hebrew word translated "was" here in Verse 2, is properly translated "became" in Genesis 2:7.

"And the Lord God formed man of the dust of the ground, and breathed into his nostrils the breath of life; and man BECAME a living soul."

Further, the word "void" in the Hebrew means "to lie waste, desolation, wilderness, and without form." Reading literally, "And the earth became without form and laid in desolation as a wilderness of waste, and darkness was upon the face of the deep."

The original creation of the Earth, in Genesis 1:1, was beautiful and God, later, put it into the chaotic condition as found in Verse 2. This is further proven by Isaiah 45:18,

"For thus saith the LORD that created the heavens; God himself that formed the earth and made it; he hath established it, he created it NOT IN VAIN..."

The word "vain" here is the same Hebrew word, "tohuw," as the word "void" found in Genesis 1:2. In other words, God did not create the Earth in the chaotic condition as found in Verse 2; but, it became that way.

The Bible does not give the length of time from the Original Creation to the Remodeling in Genesis 1:2b. It could have been millions of years. However, Adam and Eve were created only 6,000 years ago, on the sixth day of the six days of the Remodeling.

X. Creation

2. *What Does "From The Beginning" Mean?*

Matthew 19:4 Vs. Mark 10:6

Question: How would you reconcile Matthew 19:4 and Mark 10:6 with the premise that Earth is billions of years old? I believe the human race has only been around for about 6,000 years.

Answer: I would agree with you, in part. According to the genealogies and historical facts given in the Bible, Adam and Eve were created approximately 6,000 years ago. They were created on Day Six of the remodeling of Earth to make it fit for man's habitation. This begins in the last half of Genesis 1:2,

"...And the Spirit of God moved on the face of the waters."

We do not know how long the Earth lay in the judgment of the first half of Genesis 1:2,

"And the earth was without form and void; and darkness was upon the face of the deep."

(Looking at the sentence structure of the Hebrew, a better translation is "Now the earth had become without form and void...")

The verses you ask about are part of a context in which our Lord is being tested by the Pharisees on the subject of divorce. It is found both in Matthew and Mark. We will quote the verses:

"But from the beginning of the creation God made them male and female." - Mark 10:6

"...Have ye not read, that he that made them at the beginning made them male and female." - Matthew 19:4

What does the Scripture mean by the "beginning of the creation?" Does it mean from Genesis 1:1; or does it mean from the creation of Adam and Eve, i.e. the human race? The word "creation" is "ktisis" in the Greek, "the act of founding, establishing, building, etc." What God is talking about here is the foundation; or establishing of the human race, "male and female." The word "beginning" in both verses comes from the Greek word "arche" or "the beginning, origin, the first person

X. Creation

that commences, the first person or thing in a series, the leader...”
In other words, the first people in the human race, Adam and Eve.

Christ is simply saying that from the beginning of the human race, God did not intend for men and women, once married, to divorce. Then he quotes Genesis 2:24 in Matthew 19:5,

“Therefore shall a man leave his father and his mother, and shall cleave unto his wife: and they shall be one flesh.”

This is not a proof that the Earth is only 6,000 years old. The Bible is an inspired record of God’s dealings with man. It begins with man and ends with man.

3. Created vs. Made

Exodus 20:11a

Question: I have been looking into creation science and have found a verse that does not seem to support the Remodeling theory.

“For in six days the Lord made heaven and earth, the sea and all that in them is...” - Exodus 20:11a

Answer: You will notice that the word used in this verse is “made” from the Hebrew “asah” meaning a use of pre-existing materials; and not “created,” or “bara” in the Hebrew meaning “creating from nothing.” In Genesis 1:16 the word “made” or “asah” is used of the sun, moon, and stars. Here it has the meaning of “ordering or appointing” the sun, moon, and stars, already in existence, to a specific function. God appointed them as signs, or markers of time, of day and night, and the seasons. (Genesis 1:14,17,18).

The sun, moon, and stars were already in existence as in Genesis 1:1,

“In the beginning God created (“bara,” from nothing) the heaven(s) (plural in the original) and the earth.”

In Genesis 1:1 the “heavens” (or shamayim), included Planet

X. Creation

Earth and all the solar systems of the universe. Because of the judgment rendered when the Earth “became” without form and void,” they were hidden in the “darkness” of Genesis 1:2 and had to be brought into use again.

Looking at the sentence structure in the original Hebrew, Genesis 1:2a should be rendered, “Now the earth had become without form and void.”

Only two creative acts are recorded in the six days of Remodeling (Genesis 1:2b-31): animal life (Verse 21), and man (Verse 27). Animals are both said to be “created” and “made.” “Created,” never having existed before (Verse 21); and “made;” or “appointed” to reproduce after his kind, not evolve! (Verse 25).

Man was “made,” or “appointed,” to be in the image of God (body, soul, and spirit, a triune being) and exhibit God’s righteousness. Man was “made,” or “appointed,” to have dominion over animal life and the Earth. (Verse 26). God “created” man and woman, as no human life had existed before. Man was not an animal, he did not evolve. Adam was fully human, walking, talking, speaking with intelligence; and having the ability to make decisions. He was able to understand the consequences of obedience or disobedience to God. God gave him everything he needed. Adam and Eve were totally capable of being responsible for their decisions

Genesis 2:7 is not a contradictory account, as some claim; but, gives the specifics. God “formed” man of the dust of the ground (just as a sculptor makes a statue) and “*breathed into him the breath of life and he became a living soul.*” The specifics of the creation of woman are given in Genesis 2:21,22.

In Genesis 1:31

“And God saw every thing that he had made, and behold, it was very good. And the evening and the morning were the sixth day.”

God saw everything He had “asah,” “appointed or re-ordered” in the six days of Remodeling; including things created

X. Creation

and things reused from the original creation. Then He rested on the seventh day. This is the basis for Exodus 20:11. Exodus 20:11 does not mean the Earth is only 6,000 years old.

The Bible is not the history of the planet. It is a record of the history and future of mankind, on the planet, as inspired by God! Remember, time begins with man and ends with man.

4. Where Did Cain Get His Wife?

Question: Where did Cain get his wife?

Answer: Let's see what the Bible has to say. Cain was the firstborn of Adam and Eve. (Genesis 4:1). His brothers, Abel (Genesis 4:2) and Seth (Genesis 4:25) were only *two* in the first generation born on Earth. Even though only these three are named, Adam and Eve had other children. We find this in Genesis 5:4,

"And the days of Adam after he had begotten Seth were eight hundred years: and he begat sons and daughters:"

The Bible does not say *when* Adam and Eve's children were born; but, some were probably born in the years before Seth was born, or there would have been no one for Cain to marry. Neither does the Bible say *how many* children Adam and Eve bore during their long lifetimes (Adam lived a total of 930 years, Genesis 5:5). But, since God commanded them to *"...Be fruitful and multiply"...*(Genesis 1:28), there were probably many.

Therefore, during the first generation born to Adam and Eve, some men had to marry sisters. As time went on and the grandchildren of Adam and Eve matured, there would have been marriages between brothers and sisters, nieces and nephews, and cousins. This continued to the great-grandchildren and so on.

Many have tried to figure this mathematically. We'll just call it a population explosion! Some call this incest and say it was against God's law. This is not true, as it was not until approximately 2500 years later, in the time of Moses, God forbade brother and sister (and close relatives) to marry. Read

X. Creation

Leviticus, Chapters 18 through 20.

We should also point out another fallacy. Cain would not have needed a mark if he could flee to another race of people who did not know him and could have cared less; since they would not be relatives. He was afraid (Genesis 4:14,15) because he feared his "relatives" would take vengeance against him for his brother, Abel's, death. There was only one "race" of people on the Earth and they were ALL descended from Adam and Eve!

One final point! Cain did not flee to Nod because there were many people there who could help him build a great city. He went there to *build* the city with the help of his descendants listed in Genesis 4:16-24. Where did Cain get his wife. He married his sister, or niece; and took her with him to the land of Nod and there they had children!

According to the Bible, we are *all* descendants of Adam and Eve and the *only* ones who can benefit from the salvation provided by God (Romans 5:12). Only by accepting the perfect sacrifice of another descendant of Adam (Luke 3:23, 38), the Lord Jesus Christ, can we be saved. 1 Corinthians 15:22 states:

"For as in Adam all die, even so in Christ shall all be made alive."

To be "in Christ" means you have accepted Him as your personal Savior. I hope you have done this.

5. Questions About the Flood and the Age of the Earth

Questions: What do you tell a kid who wants to know more about Noah's Flood...? When he asks how all the species of animals fit on the Ark, what do you tell him? If you are asked where all of the water came from to cover the high mountain ranges, what do you say? He then asks how all the dinosaurs fit on the Ark? These are tough questions...The answers could entail a torturous explanation of billions of years before a merely regional flood, but that wouldn't really answer his questions, would it?

X. Creation

Answer: In analyzing your questions, and the other information in your letter, you appear to be typical of the "Young Earthers" in the assumptions you make about those whose views differ from your own.

Those who believe the original languages of the Bible and support a gap of unknown length of time between Genesis 1:1 and 1:2 are FALSELY ACCUSED by "Young Earthers", such as yourself. You unfairly "lump" us all in together with others who postulate a "Day/Age Theory," Theistic Evolution, or that so-called "pre-historic" man-like fossils occurred millions of years ago; but had no souls; therefore they were not dealt with by God and his plan of Salvation as given in the Bible. Many good, Bible-believing pastors and teachers have been condemned in this way. Mr. Ken Ham, no doubt one of your peers, does exactly what I have just described. I have contacted Ken Ham back in 1998 as to where he stood on biblical theological issues. My questions to him were:

1. Do you believe God predestinates some persons for Heaven and some for Hell?

2. Do you believe when you trust Christ as Saviour you are saved eternally; or is there something you could do that would cause you to lose your salvation?

3. Do you believe biblical repentance means "turning from sin" or, "a change of mind," or both?

4. Do you believe Salvation includes: "committing your life to Christ," "making Christ Lord of your life," "letting Jesus come into your heart," putting "all on the altar," (All of which add the element of works to the Gospel); or, "Do we have salvation by simply believing that Christ died for my sins, and when I trust Him as my Saviour, He gives me eternal life?" (John 3:16; Ephesians 2:8,9).

5. Do you believe the Church is raptured before the Tribulation? in the middle? or after the Tribulation?"

6. Do you believe that the "tongues" in 1 Corinthians 12-14 and Acts, Chapter 2, are for today?

X. Creation

A representative of his organization responded to me that these issues were not central to their ministry, and would cause division. They do not get into these issues as their ministry is a specific ministry, concentrating on Creation versus Evolution.

He did not mention that, by not clarifying himself on these theological issues, they were guaranteed acceptance into any church or organization, regardless of its doctrine. I thought we were to "Provide things honest in the sight of all men." (Romans 12:17; 2 Corinthians 8:21.) In other words, Mr. Ham would not answer questions concerning theological issues. Then tell me, Mr. Ham, how you are going to help a non-Christian or Christian when you refuse to take a stand on theological issues as presented in God's word. This is compromise to the "Nth degree!" When you have a false teaching such as the "young earth" philosophy, never taught in the Bible, this kind of false teaching always leads to other false doctrines, including compromise.

I believe that the days of Creation were twenty-four hour days, as proven by the Biblical context. (Genesis 1:5,8,13,19,23,31). "and the evening and the morning were the first day," "second day," "third day," and etc. God did not say the "evening and the morning" were a geological age. I think God knows the difference between a geological age and 24 hours, don't you?

I do not believe that the Flood was only regional; but, firmly hold to the Bible's teaching that the Flood was a universal flood, covering the tops of the mountains, and destroying all flesh except the 8 persons in the Ark. (Genesis 7:19-24)

I do not believe, nor does the Bible teach, any such fallacy that Noah tried to put "millions and millions" of species on the Ark. For "replenishing the earth," only the male and female of the original species was taken. And for food, Noah took by "sevens" male and female, of the "clean beasts." (Genesis 7:2,8-9; 8:20; 9:2,3).

I do not believe that mankind evolved in any way; nor, do I

X. Creation

believe that animals have evolved in any way. There are no changes between species; and adaptations within the species have been falsely used by unbelieving scientists as "a proof" of evolution. In the approximately 4,400 years since the flood, we have many varieties of animals, insects, and plants that have developed from the original species. Many have gone extinct. Concerning your questions regarding the flood, you will find your answers in our Archives. "How Could Noah's Ark Hold All of Those Animals?"

I believe that Jesus Christ was God in human flesh, sent to Earth to redeem fallen mankind. He did this by giving Himself as a sacrifice on the Cross to pay for the sin of mankind, past, present, and future. (John 3:16; Ephesians 2:8,9; 2 Corinthians 5:21).

I admire the zeal of those who fight against the insidious teaching of Evolution to our children; but, to win the battle, you have to fight it God's way—with His Word! (2 Timothy 2:15). We live in a world where we have only to look at the news of the day to see mankind behaving itself in a purely animalistic way!

It is my contention that the way to fight what is wrong with the education system, government, and mankind is to change the destiny of men. What is the best way to do that? Preach the Gospel, which is the death, burial, and Resurrection of Jesus Christ! Genesis 3:15 fulfilled! Only the indwelling of the Holy Spirit can change a person, and this only occurs when you trust Christ as your Savior. (Ephesians 1:13,14). And, we don't have much time! (Revelation 22:20).

I believe the book of Genesis in its entirety. It is God's Word! I believe it just the way God said it! The fight against Evolution is surely important! But it is SINFUL to falsely portray your "own troops," when you have not taken the time to find out what they actually believe! The Book of Genesis contains 50 chapters, the whole Bible contains 66 books. Get on with it! Stop creating controversy among believers and causing ridicule in the scientific community. Take the Bible at God's

X. Creation

word, in the original languages, as it was given! Some of this confusion has been caused by the "King James Only" camp. The King James Translation of the Bible, as we have it today, is the best translation available. It has the best manuscript evidence! But, the translation is not inspired! Only the original! It is idiocy and heresy to take only what is printed in the King James Translation; and not look at the original languages that underlie it. "King James-only" advocates say it comes from the best manuscripts. That is what the translators translated from! It is lunacy not to consult the abundant manuscript evidence which we have in existence! Read what God actually said, or did not say, in the manuscript evidence!

I believe that "Young Earthers" have actually played into the enemies' hands by appealing entirely to Science to prove the Bible. You have lost the battle before you even start by proposing a "young earth" of 6,000 to 10,000 years of age. (Take your pick of your proponents.) And so you go about to prove your points scientifically. (1 Timothy 6:20; 2 Timothy 2:16). The Bible can stand on its own! If a child asks questions, teach him from the Bible—the whole Bible! Do not give him little books to read about "Were There Dinosaurs on the Ark!" Many times children have questions—because we cause them to have questions!

The truth is that no one knows the age of the Earth! Time begins with man and ends with man? The Earth was here before man arrived, and I am talking about the literal Adam and Eve, who sinned in the Garden of Eden. Archbishop Ussher was right about many things; but, NOT about the age of the Earth!

Thank you for writing. I shall not correspond again. You should have a local pastor, and be able to consult with him. However, I am wondering if he will have the guts to buck the trend! I believe those who are advocating this "young earth" philosophy will have much to answer for at the Judgment Seat of Christ! Controversy generates cash, does it not!

This "Young Earth" philosophy is a damnable teaching, in

X. Creation

dire contrast to the Bible's teaching. (Colossians 2:8).

"Beware lest any man spoil you through PHILOSOPHY and VAIN DECEIT, after the TRADITION of men, after the rudiments of the world, and not after Christ."

The thing that sickens me is, the "Young Earth" proponents use DECEIT in telling other people that those who disagree with them hold to certain things, which they do not! They contend that the only reason to teach there is an undetermined length of time between Genesis 1:1 and 1:2 is to allow time for evolution to occur. Not true! I am a Creationist and believe in the undetermined length of time between these verses because the ORIGINAL LANGUAGES SUPPORT IT! These are the lies and deceptions held by these people, which I deplore!

Note: If I had a section entitled "If You Don't Want My Peaches, Don't Shake My Tree," this question would be included. This man was looking for approval on his young earth web site. He commented on my answer by giving me a new nickname, "Mr. Nice Guy."

XI. Cross-Less Gospel

1. *The "Cross-less" Gospel*

Question: Dear Pastor Younce, I read some material the other day that bothered me a lot. The writer stated that if you just believe that Jesus can give you eternal life, He will give you eternal life. I didn't see anything about Christ's Resurrection or His Death on the Cross. Can you give me your assessment of this writer's statement.

Answer: I am aware of this new pseudo-teaching, "Faith Alone in Christ Alone" that has recently surfaced. That sounds very good; but here is their underlying message, "Just believe in Jesus and you will have eternal life." Am I saved by simply believing this? Positively, No! No one obtains eternal life by just believing that Jesus Christ has the power and right to give eternal life. This message projects a pseudo-gospel without a Cross; or, as some have termed it, the Cross-less Gospel.

The above is very deceiving, in that the reader may assume that the above statement includes believing in the Death, Burial and Resurrection of the Lord Jesus Christ; because you are already a believer; but, it does not! The proponents of this false teaching say, "Just believe in Jesus, and you will have eternal life." "Well," you say, "What's wrong with that?"

The proponents of the Cross-less Gospel forget that many of the texts they quote about simply believing in Christ for Salvation, are part of a larger context, which clearly sets out the Death, Burial, and Resurrection of our Lord Jesus Christ. For example: Romans 4:4,5 is part of the context of Romans 4:24,25; John 3:16-18 is part of a larger context including John 3:14; Ephesians 2:8,9 is part of the context of Ephesians 1:7; the context of John 6:35-40 contains John 6:51, etc. These are just a few of the references given in the Newsletter, referenced in the next paragraph.

This false doctrine has been put forth by Grace in Focus, and as Bob Wilkin states in his March/April Newsletter, he is the

XI. Crossless Gospel

"Founder and Head." I have quoted just one statement from this Newsletter, entitled, "Five Current Confusions Concerning the Gospel" By Bob Wilkin. I quote:

"Nowhere in the entire Bible are we told that the person who believes the gospel has everlasting life, is saved, is justified, will never die spiritually, or anything of the kind."

And, of course, that is in direct opposition to God's Word in 1 Corinthians 15:1-4. One will notice, their battle-cry, "Faith Alone in Christ Alone," stands out in bold type at the bottom of the Newsletter.

Since we are dealing with the Salvation of souls, we must give the Gospel with great clarity. We must give the right information. There must be two things that must occur before anyone can receive eternal life.

1. The Giver: Jesus Christ is the only One who is qualified to give eternal life; since, as the sinless Son of God, He paid for the sins of mankind by His Death and Resurrection, as recorded in 1 Corinthians 15:1-4,

"Moreover, brethren, I declare unto you the gospel which I preached unto you, which also ye have received, and wherein ye stand; (1) By which also ye are saved, if ye keep in memory what I preached unto you, unless ye have believed in vain. (2) For I delivered unto you first of all that which I also received, how that Christ died for our sins according to the scriptures; (3) And that he was buried, and that he rose again the third day according to the scriptures:"

Thus, the Lord Jesus Christ is qualified by His Death (His payment for sin on the Cross), and Resurrection (showing God's acceptance of the payment), to give eternal life to all those who by faith will receive it. To be able to receive eternal life, you must know about, so you can believe in, the Death and Resurrection of Jesus Christ; or there is no justification to the lost. Notice Romans 4:24,25...

"But for us also, to whom it shall be imputed, if we believe on him that raised up Jesus our Lord from the dead: Who was delivered

XI. Cross-Less Gospel

(death on the Cross) for our offenses, and was raised again for our justification."

Therefore, making a statement such as "Faith Alone in Christ alone." or "One receives eternal life by just believing that Christ gives eternal life," does not result in salvation. This belief is empty and void of the Death and Resurrection of Jesus Christ and does not give eternal life. It is a "gospel" without a Cross. It is a good example of "believing in vain." (1 Corinthians 15:2b). Why? You have not heard the true Gospel and have believed a wrong message.

2. The Receiver: Anyone can receive eternal life; if, they hear the right message. An unsaved person may ask, "I understand that good works, or any works of the flesh will not give me eternal life; so, what must I believe to receive eternal life?" The answer is always found in God's Word. We must believe Christ died on the Cross as the payment for our sin, and rose again, showing God accepted His payment. This is substantiated by Romans 4:25,

"(Christ) Who was delivered for our offenses (the Cross) and was raised again (Resurrection) for our justification."

This is the Death and Resurrection of Jesus Christ in payment for the sins of every human being. When I believe that Christ died and was resurrected for me, personally, paying for my sins; I am given eternal life immediately upon my faith in Him. Romans 5:1 makes this perfectly clear,

"Therefore being justified by faith, we have peace with God through our Lord Jesus Christ."

As does John 3:16,

"For God so loved the world, that he gave (on the Cross) his only begotten Son, that whosoever believeth in him (His death on the cross) should not perish, but have everlasting life."

And should anyone doubt that John 3:16 is talking about Christ's Death on the Cross, I quote John 3:14,

XI. Crossless Gospel

"And as Moses lifted up the serpent in the wilderness, even so must the Son of man be lifted up:"

The Gospel is the sacrificial Death and Resurrection of our Lord Jesus Christ. This is what the Bible says we must know about and understand to make a decision to accept or reject Christ. May I recapitulate to 1 Corinthians 15. In Verse 1 we are told,

"Moreover, brethren, I declare unto you the gospel which I preached unto you."

Then, we are told what the Gospel is in Verses 3b, and 4.

"...How that Christ died for our sins according to the scriptures: And that he was buried, and that he rose again the third day according to the scriptures;"

This Gospel is what the Corinthians received (i.e. believed) for eternal life. The last part of Verse 1 verifies this, "...which also ye have received and wherein ye stand."

To make a statement such as: "I have received eternal life because I believe that Jesus gives eternal life," is NOT salvation. I see nothing in the preceding statement about the Cross or Resurrection of Christ. The Word of God addresses this in 1 Corinthians 15:14, notice carefully.

"And if Christ be not risen, then is our preaching vain, and your faith is also vain."

There is no Salvation without believing in Christ's Resurrection. 1 Corinthians 15:17 makes this very clear.

"And if Christ be not raised, your faith is in vain; ye are yet in your sins."

One should acknowledge that there have been many in past centuries, and up to and including our present time, who have promised eternal life to their followers. A few in our time have even claimed to be Christ. Many today think of Jesus Christ merely as good man of History who died a martyr's death. During Jesus' ministry, there were others with the same name.

XI. Cross-Less Gospel

What separated the sinless Son of God from others bearing the same name was His Death and Resurrection.

Therefore, this new teaching which has recently surfaced, stating that, "You receive eternal life by simply believing that Jesus and/or Christ has the power to give you eternal life," is empty and void of eternal life. This could apply to any person named "Jesus" or any human being claiming to be "Christ."

To have eternal life, a person must understand that Jesus Christ went to the Cross, being crucified, and was resurrected as payment for their sin. When one places their faith in Jesus Christ as the one who did this for them, personally, they are then saved; that means, saved from paying for their own sin in Hell, the Lake of Fire. (Matthew 25:41). This is the Gospel with the Cross included!

Notice how the Cross is referred to in these statements about the blood of our Lord Jesus Christ.

Romans 5:9,10b, "...being now justified by his (Christ's) blood (Cross);we shall be saved by his life (Resurrection)."

Ephesians 1:7, "In whom we have redemption through his (Christ's) blood, the forgiveness of sins, according to the riches of his grace;"

Revelation 1:5, "...Unto him (Christ) that loved us, and washed us from our sins in his own blood." (the Cross).

Hebrews 9:22, "And almost all things are by the law purged with blood; and without shedding of blood is no remission."

Revelation 5:9, "...for thou (Christ) wast slain (Cross), and hast redeemed us to God; by thy blood of every kindred, and tongue, and people, and nation."

1 Peter 1:18,19, tells us that we were "redeemed, with the precious blood (Cross) of Christ, as of a lamb, without blemish and without spot."

This false teaching we have just covered may seem like "splitting hairs;" and that is exactly what Satan wants you to

XI. Crossless Gospel

believe. But, in reality, it is the difference between Heaven and Hell! Satan hates the Resurrection. You must know about Christ's Death on the Cross and His Resurrection to accept or reject His offer of eternal life. That is what the Bible teaches that the Gospel is. Without the Cross, you have no payment for sin. Without the Resurrection, you have no finished Salvation.

Personally, I am not trusting my eternal life to come from just someone named "Jesus," or a human being called "Christ," but, rather, to come from the Lord Jesus Christ; God manifested in the flesh, bearing the authentic credentials of His Crucifixion and His Resurrection. This is truly the Son of God, not an imposter bearing His name.

Remember, a "Cross-less" gospel saves no one! We would do well to remember the words of this precious old hymn, given below.

THE OLD RUGGED CROSS

On a hill far away, stood an old rugged Cross,
The emblem of suffering and shame;
And I love that old Cross where the dearest and best
For a world of lost sinners was slain.

Oh, that old rugged Cross so despised by the world
Has a wondrous attraction for me;
For the dear Lamb of God left his glory above,
To bear it to dark Calvary.

In the old rugged Cross, stained with blood so divine,
A wondrous beauty I see;
For 'twas on that old Cross Jesus suffered and died,
To pardon and sanctify me.

To the old rugged Cross I will ever be true,
Its shame and reproach gladly bear;
Then he'll call me some day to my home far away,
Where his glory forever I'll share.

XI. Cross-Less Gospel

So I'll cherish the rugged Cross,
Till my trophies at last I lay down'
I will cling to the old rugged Cross,
And exchange it some day for a crown.

Composer: George Bennard, taken from HYMNS OF
FAITH & INSPIRATION, Ideals Publications Incorporated,
Nashville, Tennessee, 1990, pgs 88-91.

XII. Difficult Scriptures

1. *Did God Create Evil?*

Isaiah 45:7

Question: How can I explain Isaiah 45:7 which says that "God created evil." This has me stumped!

Answer: Isaiah 45:7 states, "I form the light, and create darkness: I make peace and CREATE EVIL: I the LORD do all these things."

The word "evil" in the above quoted text is translated from the Hebrew word "ra." "Ra" is translated "sorrow, wretchedness, adversity, afflictions, calamities", BUT; never translated "sin." God created evil only in the sense that He made sorrow, wretchedness, and etc. to be the sure fruits of sin.

2. *What Is The Unpardonable Sin?*

Question: What is the unpardonable sin? My brother is convinced he has committed it...has horrible nightmares and has tried to end his life over this.

Answer: First, the term "unpardonable sin" does not appear in the Bible. There is no "unpardonable" or "unforgivable" sin, except *in this sense*. If you die without trusting Christ as your Savior, your destiny is Hell and it is too late to change the destination you have chosen. Your sins were all paid for on Calvary when Christ died for the sin of the world. (John 3:16). If you die without believing that Christ did this for you; i.e. accepting the forgiveness He provided, then you end up in Hell. (John 3:18, John 3:36). The forgiveness was offered; but you refused it.

Probably someone told your brother that he had "blasphemed the Holy Ghost" and showed him Matthew 12:31, 32.

"Wherefore I say unto you, All manner of sin and blasphemy shall be forgiven unto men; but the blasphemy against the Holy

XII. Difficult Scriptures

Ghost shall not be forgiven unto men. And whosoever speaketh a word against the Son of man, it shall be forgiven him: but whosoever speaketh against the Holy Ghost, it shall not be forgiven him, neither in this world ("age"), neither in the world (or "age") to come."

(The companion passage is Mark 3:28-30.)

"*This age*" is the Dispensation of Law: the time before the crucifixion when Israel (nationally, as a group) rejected Christ as their Messiah. They were not a legal nation, having a land and a king; but, were governed by the Sanhedrin under the permission of Rome. "*The age to come*" is the Dispensation of Grace, or the Church Age, where "*There is neither Jew nor Greek...for ye are all one in Christ Jesus.*" (Galatians 3:28).

What was the "blasphemy against the Holy Ghost" or the "speaking against the Holy Ghost" that the Nation of Israel was not to be forgiven of in "*this age*" or "*the age to come*?" It was rejecting the conviction of the Holy Spirit that Jesus Christ was their Messiah. John 1:11 says "*He came unto his own, and his own received him not.*" This is proven by the fact that Christ addressed these verses to the "Pharisees" (Matthew 12:24) and "*...the scribes which came down from Jerusalem.*" (Mark 3:22). These were the "Seminary Professors" who told the Nation of Israel what to believe and refused to accept Christ as the promised Messiah.

This was a *dispensational sin* committed by the Nation of Israel. The sin was not forgiven in the Age of Law or the "*age to come*," the Church Age; but will be forgiven. When? When Israel is restored as a Nation with a land and a king, the Lord Jesus Christ, in the Millennium.

"For I would not, brethren, that ye should be ignorant of this mystery, lest ye should be wise in your own conceits; that blindness in part is happened to Israel, until the fulness of the Gentiles be come in. (25) AND SO ALL ISRAEL SHALL BE SAVED: as it is written, There shall come out of Sion the Deliverer, and shall turn away ungodliness from Jacob." - Romans 11:25,26

XIII. Doctrine

Tell your brother, "If he has accepted Jesus Christ as his personal Savior, he cannot be guilty of the unpardonable sin of unbelief." Why? Because he believes!"

"Verily, verily, I say unto you, He that heareth my word, and believeth on him that sent me, hath everlasting life, and shall not come into condemnation; but is passed from death unto life." - John 5:24

3. *What Was "Joseph's Coat of Many Colors" Really Like?*

Question: I have heard that Joseph's coat of many colors referred to in Genesis 37 was not that at all. I know this is not a really important question.

Answer: This phrase appears in Genesis 37:3,23,32. The Hebrew here is "pac" and means "spread out, a coat spread out, i.e. a large coat". Probably something that resembled our overcoat. There is a Hebrew word, "piqmah" which means "variation of colors", but it does not appear here; neither does the Hebrew "tala" meaning "spotted with colors".

4. *They that Take the Sword Shall Perish With The Sword?*

Matthew 26:52

Question: What did Christ mean when He said, "For all they that take the sword shall perish with the sword." (Matthew 26:52).

Answer: Prior to Christ's arrest in the garden, He repeatedly told his disciples that He would be crucified and resurrected. Peter, along with many others, "*thought that the kingdom of God should immediately appear* (i.e. be established)." (Luke 19:11). In Matthew 16:21-23, during Christ's teaching about his coming death and Resurrection, Christ rebuked Peter, saying,

"Get thee behind me, Satan: for thou art an offense unto me: for thou savourest not the things that be of God, but those that be of men."

XII. Difficult Scriptures

Later, when they came to arrest Christ in the garden, Peter again tried to interfere by cutting off Malchus' ear. (John 18:10). Christ immediately healed the ear. (Luke 22:50,51).

"Then said Jesus unto him (Peter). Put up again thy sword into his place: for all they that take the sword shall perish with the sword."

Practically speaking, any person who cuts off with their "sword of unbelief" the death, burial, and Resurrection of Jesus Christ as the complete payment for their sin, will be lost (perish) forever in a place called Hell. (Luke 16:19-24). Had it been possible for Peter to prevent Christ's death on the Cross, which it was not possible, the redemption of mankind would not have occurred.

Christ said in John 14:6,

"I am the way, the truth, and the life: no man cometh unto the Father, but by me."

No amount of good works, baptism, communion, church membership, or social prestige will ever merit a person eternal life. (Ephesians 2:8,9). Christ said,

"Verily, verily, I say unto you, he that BELIEVETH ON ME hath everlasting life."- John 6:47

5. *What About the Short Bed in Isaiah 28:20?*

Question: Would you please explain what it means in Isaiah 28:20 when speaking of a "short bed."

"For the bed is shorter than that a man can stretch himself on it: and the covering narrower than he can wrap himself in it."

Answer: This is a figure of speech by which the prophet Isaiah is trying to impress upon the children of Israel as to how hopeless, and useless, it is for them, to try and save themselves by their own means. Instead of going to the Lord and trusting the true and living God, they were going to the other nations and trying to solve their problems in their own way.

XIII. Doctrine

The Lord compares the futile efforts on the part of the nation of Israel to that of a man trying to keep warm in a bed which is too short for him, and also having insufficient covering. It is an oriental figure of speech designed to illustrate the absolute necessity of looking to, and trusting only the Lord for their salvation.

Isaiah also warns the people of Israel not to trust the leadership of their leaders, the prophets and the priests, for they had become nothing but drunks. Notice in Isaiah 28:7.

"But they also have erred through wine, and through strong drink are out of the way; the priest and the prophet have erred through strong drink, they are swallowed up of wine, they are out of the way through strong drink; they err in vision, they stumble in judgment."

Many there are, today, that are trusting in their pastor and their church membership, instead of searching the Scriptures for themselves to see what the Lord has to say.

John 5:39 says,

"Search the scriptures; for in them ye think ye have eternal life: and they are they which testify of me (Christ)."

The word "think" in this verse is the Greek "DOKEO" and means to form an opinion, right or wrong. If one is trusting church tradition (Mark 7:7,9); or a preacher's philosophy (Colossians 2:8), they will find when they stand before the Lord that the "bed of tradition," and the "blanket of philosophy" were insufficient for the covering of their sins.

Jeremiah warns in 17:5,

"Thus saith the LORD; Cursed be the man that trusteth in man, and maketh flesh his arm,..."

God's word is clear concerning eternal life.

"He that believeth on the Son (Jesus Christ) hath everlasting life, and he that believeth not the Son shall not see life; but the wrath of God abideth on him." - John 3:36

XII. Difficult Scriptures

"It is better to trust in the LORD than to put confidence in man."- Psalm 118:8

6. Will You Go To Hell For Calling Someone A Fool?

Matthew 5:21, 22

Question: Would you please help me with an explanation of Matthew 5:21, 22?

Answer: We quote:

"Ye have heard that it was said by them of old time, Thou shalt not kill; and whosoever shall kill shall be in danger of the judgment:" (21) But I say unto you, That whosoever is angry with his brother without a cause shall be in danger of the judgment: and whosoever shall say unto his brother, RACA, shall be in danger of the council (Greek: Sanhedrin): but whosoever shall say, Thou fool, shall be in danger of hell fire."(22)

Verse 22 shows what can happen to any person who, without a cause, allows the little things to fester, (i.e., by misunderstandings, lies someone has told you about someone else; combined with jealousy, resentment, and etc.), until "a pebble becomes a mountain" in that person's mind. "Angry without a cause," literally means: "a troublemaker," may incur more (i.e., judgment) from the offended than he expected.

The next step is "RACA", which means, "empty one or worthless." This the offender calls his brother and which, in reality, describes his own character. He is angry without a cause; but, persistent in pursuit of the innocent person. This could result in an assault, which could result in civil charges to be faced in front of the court, the Sanhedrin.

Then, should he continue by calling a person a fool to his face; it would be evident his hatred and emotions were completely out of control. This could result in his killing the person and then facing criminal charges. Verse 21 covers the end result, which is murder.

"Whosoever shall kill shall be in danger of the judgment."

XIII. Doctrine

This means, if the offender is caught and convicted, he would be put to death under the law (Exodus 21:12).

The law had provided for six refuge cities to which a person could flee for protection, who had killed someone accidentally, until the case could be judged. (Numbers 35:11,15). Should a person be found guilty of murder, which was unprovoked by the victim and witnessed by two people, then that person was to be put to death. Numbers 35:30 explains,

“Whoso killeth any person, the murderer shall be put to death by the mouth of witnesses: but one witness shall not testify against any person to cause him to die.”

A very practical lesson may be that we should never allow the “pebbles” of life to escalate into “mountains” which could ruin our own life, as well as the life of another.

7. *Who Are the "Overcomers" in Revelation 2:17?*

Question: Can you explain what is meant in Revelation 2:17. Who are the “overcomers” and what and how do they “overcome?”

Answer: Each of the Seven Churches in the book of Revelation are given the admonition to “overcome.” Ephesus in 2:7, Smyrna in 2:11, Pergamos in 2:17, Thyatira in 2:26, Sardis in 3:5, Philadelphia in 3:12, and Laodicea in 3:21. Also, the word “overcometh” is also used in Revelation 21:7. Those who “overcome” are in two separate categories. “Overcomers” are those in reference to salvation; as well as those who are “overcomers” by serving the Lord and not the flesh. *According to the context*, it may be applied to either salvation or service. In some places it is easy to distinguish between the two; and, in some, it is not.

For an example, let us look at Revelation 21:7.

“He that overcometh shall inherit all things; and I will be his God, and he shall be my son.”

“Overcomer” here would be concerning salvation, as only a saved person is a son of God.

XII. Difficult Scriptures

“But as many as received him, to them gave he power to become the sons of God, even to them that believe on his name:” - John 1:12

The word usage of “overcometh” concerning salvation is explained in 1 John 5:4,5.

“For whatsoever is born of God (This is the new birth in John 3:3.) overcometh the world: and this is the victory that overcometh the world, even our faith. (4) Who is he that overcometh the world, but he that believeth that Jesus is the Son of God.” (5)

It would appear, in speaking about the church at Smyrna where “overcometh” is used in Revelation 2:11; that it also refers to salvation. The reason is, those who overcome will not experience the “second death (Hell).” Notice Verse 11,

“...He that overcometh shall not be hurt of the second death.”

Now, let us see how “overcometh” is used in reference to rewards and privileges to the saved. In speaking to the church in Thyatira, notice Revelation 2:26,27, where “overcometh” is in reference to works and rewards, not salvation.

“And he that overcometh, and keepeth my works unto the end (of their life), to him will I give power over the nations:(26) And he shall rule them with a rod of iron...(27)”

This has reference to Christ’s Kingdom on Earth when He rules this world for a 1,000 years as King of Kings and Lord of Lords. Those Christians who have been faithful in their service to the Lord until the end of their life will be rewarded with the privilege of serving their Savior in the Kingdom as He directs.

There are many other rewards, such as the five crowns for various acts of faithfulness.

1. A “Crown of Rejoicing:” The soul winner’s crown - 1 Thessalonians 2:19,20; Proverbs 11:30,31.

2. A “Crown of Righteousness:” given for looking for Christ’s return - 2 Timothy 4:8

XIII. Doctrine

3. The "Incorruptible Crown:" for living a separated life - 1 Corinthians 9:25-27.

4. A "Crown of Life:" for enduring testings, even faithful unto death; sometimes called the Martyr's Crown. - James 1:12; Revelation 2:10.

5. A "Crown of Glory:" for being faithful in care of the flock...a Pastor's Crown)- 1 Peter 5:1-5.

"Therefore, my beloved brethren, be ye steadfast, unmoveable, always abounding in the work of the Lord, forasmuch as ye know that your labor is not in vain in the Lord." - 1 Corinthians 15:58

How important it is to remain faithful until we meet the Lord face-to-face. In 2 John, Verse 8, we are told

"Look to yourselves, that we lose not those things which we have wrought, but that we receive a FULL reward."

8. *Who Is Shiloh Who Washes His Garments In Wine?*

Genesis 49:10-12

Question: Can you give me some explanation of Genesis 49:10-12? I am confused about statements such as "washing garments in wine" and "eyes red with wine. Who is "Shiloh?"

Answer:

1. In Verse 10, the word translated "sceptre" is the Hebrew word "shebet" and signifies a rod or staff. Each tribe of Israel had its own rod or staff with the tribal staff or tribal identity. The literal reading would be

"The tribal identity shall not depart from Judah.... until Shiloh come."

2. "Shiloh" means "the bringer of peace" and is speaking of Christ, who is the Bringer of Peace. Remember, Judah is the tribe through which Christ was to come. (Fulfilled in Luke 3:33). In order to know that Christ was the true Messiah, the tribal identity of Judah had to be in existence. The records of which tribe each Jew was a descendent from were kept in the temple at Jerusalem.

XII. Difficult Scriptures

These records were available to anyone questioning Christ's authority as the Messiah. This prophecy (Genesis 49:10) states that these records identifying Judah and his descendents would be in existence until Shiloh (Christ) came. These records were in existence until they were destroyed in 70 A.D. by Titus, a general in the Roman army. He attacked Jerusalem, destroyed it and scattered the Jews world-wide.

3. Verse 11 covers the Jewish Nation and individual Jewish believers. (Read carefully Matthew 21:4-7 & Zechariah 9:9).

- a. "...Unto the vine" is referring to the Nation of Israel.
- b. "...Choice vine" is referring to the ones who would trust Him as their Messiah.
- c. The Fig tree, the Olive tree and the Vine are all in reference to the Nation of Israel.
 - (1). The fig tree indicates the national privileges of Israel.
 - (2). The olive tree is the religious privileges of Israel.
 - (3). The vine represents the spiritual privileges of Israel.
- d. Christ came unto the Vine (Israel) with the spiritual privilege of first accepting Him as their Messiah; but they, as a nation, rejected Him. (John 1:11). "Own" in this verse is Israel. But the "choice vine" were the precious Jews who did acknowledge HIM as their Savior. (John 1:12).

4. Genesis 49:11b-12, "...*he washed his garments in wine, and his clothes in the blood of grapes. His eyes shall be red with wine, and his teeth white with milk.*" These verses cover primarily two things concerning Christ. First, His attitude and second, His sacrifice. The first is mental and the second is physical.

- a. Wine in the Bible is a symbol of joy and happiness.
- b. Blood and grapes are a symbol of judgment in the Bible.
- c. Milk has to do with the word of God.

XIII. Doctrine

With this in mind we can now begin to see the meaning of these verses. Many times God uses symbols and earthly materials to illustrate a truth. Now that we know that wine has reference to joy, we can see that when "...he (Christ)' washed His garments in wine" and "...his eyes shall be red with wine" is referring to the joy that was set before Him, even the Cross. Hebrews 12:2 explains,

"Looking unto Jesus the author and finisher of our faith; WHO FOR THE JOY that was set before him endured the cross, despising the shame, and is set down at the right hand of the throne of God."

The joy of the Cross is that it would now enable anyone to have eternal life by simple faith. Christ loved us so much that he looked ("His eyes") upon the Cross with joy, seeing that this was the only way He could set men free of their sins. This is referring to His attitude.

Now His sacrifice, as pictured in the "*blood of grapes*", has reference to judgment. In Revelation 14:20 we read

"And the winepress was trodden without the city, and blood came out of the winepress even unto the horses bridles by the space of a thousand and six hundred furlongs (170 miles)."

Of course, this is referring to the battle of Armageddon at the end of the tribulation, when judgment is poured out on the ungodly.

This prophecy is not referring to His rendering immediate judgment upon the ungodly; but the offering of Himself as the payment of judgment for our sins. (Look up Isaiah 53:5,6; 1 Peter 2:24; 1 John 3:5; John 19:30, referring to the Cross). The baptism in Luke 12:50 is also referring to His sacrifice on the Cross to bear our judgment for sin.

The "*milk*" is referring to the word of God. (1 Peter 2:2; 1 Corinthians 3:2; Hebrews 5:13). Christ constantly proclaimed that He was the Messiah by referring to the Word of God in the Old Testament prophecies concerning Himself. His mouth was

XII. Difficult Scriptures

continually proclaiming the Word of God concerning His identity.

Praise the Lord that we have believed the record God gave of his son.

"And this is the record, that God hath given to us eternal life, and this life is in his Son. He that hath the Son hath life, and he that hath not the Son of God hath not life."- 1 John 5:11, 12

(Read also Romans 10:17). The most valuable thing in the world today is the Word of God, for there could be no eternal life without it.

"Faith cometh by hearing and hearing by the word of God."- Romans. 10:17

*Note Reference Verse 12: Some infidels have asserted that this statement, "...his eyes shall be red with wine," meant that Christ would be a winebibber and become intoxicated on occasions. Only the stupid and unlearned could derive such an asinine thought! Here the Hebrew translated wine is "yayin" and is a generic word. In the Hebrew Scriptures, the word in its broadest meaning designates grape juice; and when not restricted in its meaning by some word or circumstance, comprehends vinous beverages of every sort, however produced. It is, therefore, often restricted to the sweet, fruit of the vine in its natural and un-intoxicating state.

Now, notice the word translated "with" in this text. It is from the Hebrew "im." This Hebrew word has various applications depending on the context of the sentence and etc. Here, the English "as" would seem more appropriate. Now let's read the sentence. "His eyes shall be red as wine." The wine, i.e., the "fruit of the vine;" that delicious MUST (from the Latin "mustum"), the young juice of the grape before induced fermentation, was a delight and joy to the partaker. In other words, the color of the juice, as a simple illustration, reflected in His eyes the joy of what the Cross of Calvary was going to produce. His precious blood shed for the sin of mankind.

XIII. Doctrine

9. Seven Women to One Man?

Isaiah 4:1

Question: Can you explain Isaiah 4:1?

“And in that day seven women shall take hold of one man, saying, We will eat our own bread, and wear our own apparel: only let us be called by thy name; to take away our reproach.”

Answer: In reading the first three, preceding, chapters you will discover God’s warning of impending judgment upon the two southern tribes; Judah and Benjamin. In prophecy there is usually a primary fulfillment and a future fulfillment of God’s judgment for the sinfulness of His people. Such is the case here. The ten northern tribes, known as Israel, were taken captive in 721 B.C. by Assyria for their rebellion against Jehovah. The two southern tribes, known as Judah, should have learned a lesson from seeing their northern relatives go into captivity; but, they did not.

Isaiah prophesied they would be taken captive by the nation of Babylon, which took place in 606 B.C. about 115 years after the Assyrian captivity of the ten northern tribes. Notice the prophecy in Isaiah 39:6,7,

*“Behold the days come, that all that is in thine house, and that which thy fathers have laid up in store until this day; shall be carried to BABYLON: nothing shall be left, saith the LORD.” (6)
And of thy SONS that shall issue from thee, ...shall they (Babylon) take away; and they shall be EUNUCHS in the palace of the king of BABYLON. (7)*

Now, referring back to Isaiah 4:1, in reference to “THAT DAY” when seven women shall take after one man. “That day” will have its primary fulfillment in the Babylonian Captivity when many of the men will be killed and many taken captive, such as Daniel and his friends. The future fulfillment will be God’s judgment upon Israel after the Rapture, during the last 3-1/2 years of the Tribulation Period known as the time of “Jacob’s

XII. Difficult Scriptures

Trouble.”God’s judgment upon Israel as a nation, primarily the Babylonian Captivity, and The Great Tribulation judgment (yet future), could be what Isaiah 40:2 is speaking about.

“...for she (Israel) hath received of the LORD’S hand DOUBLE for all her sins.”

The shortage of men, due to being killed and taken captive by these judgments, will diminish the ratio to seven women to one man. A woman would forfeit the man’s responsibility and buy her own food and clothing; therefore taking away the reproach of being unwed and childless. Remember—every Jewish woman was looking to bear the “seed of the woman” (Genesis 3:15), their Messiah, the Lord Jesus Christ.

XIII. Doctrine

1. *Do I Have To "Come Forward " In Church To Be Saved?*

Question: Dr. Younce, I was saved several years ago in my home by trusting Jesus Christ as my Savior and have been baptized. In church, our pastor gives the invitation that "If you want to be saved, slip out of your seat and come forward to the front of the church." He makes me feel like I am not really saved, because I have never done this.

Answer: First, there is no Scripture anywhere that says you must come to the front of a church to be saved. This is a tradition that has crept into many fundamental churches, which now consider it to be scriptural.

Let me state, emphatically, that this practice is not biblical; and actually adds an element of works to the Gospel!

One Scripture, commonly used to support this practice is Matthew 10:32,33.

"Whosoever therefore shall confess me before men, him will I confess also before my Father which is in heaven (32)...But whosoever shall deny me before men, him will I also deny before my Father which is in heaven (33)."

This Scripture says nothing about coming to the front of the church for salvation; but, is speaking of our service to the Lord, after we are saved. We find in verses 1-7 of this chapter that Christ is sending the Apostles out to preach, who were already saved. There was one impostor; but, that wasn't the Lord's fault!

In Verse 16, they were warned they would encounter men described as "wolves." Verse 17 tells them they would be scourged! They would be brought before governors and kings because of their preaching (V. 18).

In Verse 22, Christ promised them that they would be saved from being killed, as long as they remained faithful until their ministry was finished. Then in Verses 32 and 33, quoted above, Christ promises He will confess their faithfulness to the Father for rewards; or their unfaithfulness for loss of rewards in Heaven.

XIII. Doctrine

These verses have nothing to do with salvation or the coming to the front of a church. This is service, not salvation!

Another Scripture passage used to support this extra-biblical practice is found in Romans 10:9,10. We will examine Verse 9.

“That if thou shalt confess with thy mouth the Lord Jesus, and shalt believe in thine heart that God hath raised him from the dead, thou shalt be saved.”

The question is, “Saved in whose eyes?”

Every Bible student knows there are two justifications in God’s word. One is positional justification and the other is practical justification. Our positional justification; i.e., eternal life by faith alone, is found in Romans 5:1.

“Therefore being justified by faith, we have peace with God through our Lord Jesus Christ.”

This is justification in God’s eyes.

The Christian’s practical justification is before man. Many people lead very good lives; but, that does not mean they are Christians. People cannot look into a person’s mind and see if they have faith in Jesus Christ, and are a Christian. Only when a Christian confesses their faith in Jesus Christ, does a lost person justify them as being a Christian. Romans 10:17 explains,

“So then faith cometh by hearing, and hearing by the word of God.”

When one makes a study of the Book of Acts, from Paul’s conversion on, you will find Paul witnessing to the lost—not the saved! Romans 10:9 has nothing to do with coming to the front of the church to be saved.

We are to confess openly to the lost that we believe that Jesus Christ was crucified and resurrected for our sins. We, then, will be justified as being saved by those we have witnessed to; hoping they will receive Christ, also by faith, and be saved. This is the Christian’s practical justification; or testimony.

We continue with Romans 10:10,

XIII. Doctrine

“For with the heart man believeth unto righteousness; and with the mouth confession is made unto salvation.”

The first part of the verse, “...with the heart man believeth unto righteousness...” is our justification before God. The righteousness spoken of here is Christ’s righteousness, placed to our account; with our sins (past, present, and future) placed to His account; and paid for by His death and Resurrection.

2 Corinthians 5:21 explains,

“For he hath made him (Christ) to be sin for us, who knew no sin; that we might be made the RIGHTEOUSNESS of God in him (Christ).”

Therefore I am,

“...found in him (Christ), not having mine own righteousness, which is of the law, but that which is through the faith of Christ, the righteousness which is of God by faith.” (Philippians 3:9).

This is our salvation, our everlasting life, our position in Heaven, and our justification in God’s eyes.

Now, the last part of Verse 10.

“...With the mouth confession is made unto salvation.”

Notice the word “MADE.” It is the Greek word “homologeo,” and is defined by Strong’s Concordance as “Acknowledgment by confession in the attitude of giving thanks.”

In Romans 10:10a we are saved and justified in God’s eyes. Now, in Romans 10:10b, we are giving thanks and confessing our faith to someone else. Our mouth confession is made unto salvation in the eyes of the one I am witnessing to. ***You can’t confess to something you don’t already have!***

The summary of Verse 10, literally explained, is this: I believe that Jesus Christ died for me; and I am so grateful that I am going to Heaven on His (Christ’s) righteousness; and my sins were completely paid for on Calvary. I confess to others because I want them to know they can have a home in Heaven the same

XIII. Doctrine

way I can. This is our practical justification in man's eyes, to which the last part of Romans 10:10 has reference.

Romans 10:10 has nothing to do with the coming to the front of the church.

If we continue in the context we find Romans 10:13 states,

“For whosoever shall call upon the name of the LORD shall be saved.”

This is a direct quote from Joel 2:32 where “saved” is translated “delivered” from the Hebrew. This is not speaking of salvation; but, being delivered, or saved, from the persecution they were going to receive after they were identified as being a Christian.

Before Paul was saved, he consented to Stephen's death. (Acts 7).

“And Saul was consenting unto his (Stephen's) death. And at that time there was a great persecution against the church...” (Acts 8:1)

After Paul was saved, he suffered great persecution for being a Christian. He testified to the Thessalonians,

“For ye brethren...also have suffered like things of your own countrymen, even as they have of the Jews: (14) Who both killed the Lord Jesus, and their own prophets, and have persecuted us;(15)...Forbidding us to speak to the Gentiles that they might be saved...” - 1 Thessalonians 2:14-16

To the Corinthians he wrote,

“We are troubled on every side, yet not distressed; we are perplexed, but not in despair; Persecuted, but not forsaken; cast down, but not destroyed.” (2 Corinthians 4:8,9).

Now, let us look Romans 10:13,14 together.

“For whosoever shall call upon the name of the Lord, shall be saved (i.e., ‘delivered’). How then shall they call on Him in whom they have not believed?”

Therefore, those who are believers in Christ, now have the

XIII. Doctrine

privilege to call upon the Lord, to deliver them through whatever persecution they may endure. These verses have nothing to do with coming to the front of the church and confessing Christ.

Note: For more information on this subject, we have available the book entitled *The Public Invitation, A Blessing; Or A Curse?* by the author.

2. *Will Hitler Be In Heaven At The "Times Of Restitution?"*

Acts 3:19-21

Question: Pastor Younce, I was listening to a preacher on the radio being interviewed about his new book about the Grace of God. To put it briefly and to the point, he stated that everyone is going to be saved and end up in Heaven. He stated, for example, that Hitler is in Heaven, as well as all atheists and unbelievers. Therefore, Hitler has now apologized to all those 6 million and some Jewish people he had exterminated, asking their forgiveness; and God, in His grace, has forgiven Hitler, also. The atheists, now in God's presence, have also asked God's forgiveness for being so stupid as to deny there ever was a God!

Therefore, God's grace has granted Hitler, the atheists and unbelievers forgiveness, as they have confessed the error of their way and can now, by God's grace, live on in eternity in perfect peace. He stated this grace of God applies to all humanity from Adam to the last person on Earth at the end of time. The verse he based this on was Acts 3:21, which he quoted. "*Whom the heaven must receive until the times of restitution...*" (Acts 3:21). What do you think about this?

Answer: This is nothing new, as once again Satan raises his ugly head to insert his fangs of false doctrine into God's creation to poison their minds. Satan uses ungodly men, such as this preacher, to perpetrate his lies, just as God uses Christians to spread the truth of God's Word.

You will note that he quoted only *part* of the verse. One cannot isolate part of a verse and take it out of context without

XIII. Doctrine

arriving at a false doctrine. Therefore we will quote Verses 19,20, and 21, which will illuminate the meaning of this passage and refute this man's false and Satanic teaching of Universalism.

“Repent (Greek, “change your mind”) ye therefore, and be converted (Greek epistrepho, i.e.), that your sins may be blotted out, when the times of refreshing shall come from the presence of the Lord;” (V.19).

“And he shall send Jesus Christ, which before was preached unto you:” (V.20).

“Whom the heaven must receive until the times of restitution (Greek means “restoration”) of all things, which God hath spoken by the mouth of all his holy prophets since the world began.” (Acts 3:19-21).

I. Verse 19.

1. *“Repent.”* The Greek means to “change your mind.”

2. *“Converted.”* The Greek is *epistrepho* and means “to turn.” In other words, “Change your mind and turn towards Christ.” Conversion is a voluntary act in response to the presentation of truth.

3. *“From the presence of the Lord.”* This is not the Rapture; but, the Revelation when Christ comes back to the Earth to judge the nations (Matthew 25:31-41) and establish his Kingdom reign for 1,000 years. Acts 1:11 states He left the Earth and ascended to Heaven AND *“...shall so come in like manner as ye have seen him go into heaven.”* He left the Earth and went to Heaven, and will leave Heaven and come back to the Earth. At the Rapture, He does not come to the Earth. (1 Thessalonians 4:17).

II. Verse 20.

1. *“And he shall send Jesus Christ...”* All the Old Testament prophets, along with all references in Matthew, Mark, Luke, and John, concerning Christ's coming are speaking of His return to set up His Kingdom reign on Earth. None of the above knew anything about the Rapture, as this was a Mystery revealed by the Apostle Paul. You will not find the Rapture in the Old

XIII. Doctrine

Testament, nor the Gospels.

III. “Restitution of all things.” (Verse 21).

The Greek for “restitution” is *apokathistemi*. *Apo* (meaning, ‘back again,’ and *kathistemi* meaning ‘to set in order.’ In other words, Christ will “set things in order,” as He will rule this Earth for a 1,000 years in peace. Israel will be restored all the land promised to Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob. Christ will deliver the world from the power and deception of Satan, as he will be chained during Christ’s reign (Revelation 20:1-3). The wilderness and desert will blossom as a rose (Isaiah 35:1,2,6,7). There will be no more war (Isaiah 2:4 and Micah 4:3). Peace will prevail in the animal kingdom (Isaiah 11:6-8), and on and on. #I has nothing to do with the lost who die in unbelief.

IV. Universalism.

This projects that all humanity will be saved and end up in Heaven, including Satan and his fallen angels (demons). This perversion is based upon Acts 3:21 and projected by Satan and his ministers. Notice 2 Corinthians 11:13-15.

“For such are false apostles, deceitful workers, transforming themselves into the apostles of Christ. (V.13).

“And no marvel; for Satan himself is transformed into an angel of light.” (V.14).

“Therefore it is no great thing if his ministers also be transformed as the ministers of righteousness; whose end shall be according to their works.”- 2 Corinthians 11:13-15

V. No Second Chances!

“...restitution of all things, which God hath spoken by the mouth of all his holy prophets...

1. No prophet has ever spoken of Satan or his demons being regenerated. Christ makes this clear in Matthew 25:41.

“Depart from me, ye cursed, into everlasting fire, prepared for the devil and his angels:”

XIII. Doctrine

Notice in Revelation 20:10.

“And the devil that deceived them was cast into the lake of fire and brimstone, where the beast and the false prophet are, and shall be tormented day and night for ever and ever.”

God makes it perfectly clear that Satan and his demons will be tormented “*for ever and ever*” in the “*everlasting fire*.” Why would God create an “everlasting fire, if sometime in the future Satan and all the unsaved were going to get out. “Everlasting” means the fires of Hell will *never* go out, because Satan and the lost will *never* get out!

2. A false philosophy. This asserts that when Satan’s angels BELIEVE in the one and only true God of creation, they will be forgiven and live in Heaven with Christ.

3. Refutation. God Himself refutes this philosophy in His Word, the Bible, in James 2:19.

“Thou (i.e., Christians) believest that there is one God; thou doest well: the devils (demons) also believe, and tremble.”

The Book of James was penned about 45 A.D. That is over 1965 years ago. The angels were created prior to the creation of mankind and mankind’s being put on Earth. So, if they believe now; then, why do they tremble? The reason is that they have believed too late!

When Satan wanted to take over God’s position and authority...

“For thou hast said in thine heart, I will ascend into heaven, I will exalt my throne above the stars of God: I will sit also upon the mount of the congregation, in the sides of the north: (V.13). I will ascend above the heights of the clouds; I will be like the most High.” - Isaiah 14:13-14

“Thou wast perfect in thy ways from the day that thou wast created, till iniquity was found in thee.” - Ezekiel 28:15

...One-third of all the angels followed Satan.

XIII. Doctrine

“And his (Satan’s) tail drew the third part of the stars (demonic angels) of heaven; and did cast them to the earth: and the dragon stood before the woman which was ready to be delivered, for to devour her child as soon as it was born.” - Revelation 12:4

Their destiny was then sealed in Hell forever! They have believed too late. If they had received “restitution,” they would now have the peace of a Christian instead of trembling with fear.

“Therefore being justified by faith, we have peace with God through our Lord Jesus Christ:” - Romans 5:1

4. All who die in unbelief will be *believers* in Hell; BUT, with no escape or second chance. They must trust Christ as their Savior *before* they die, believing He paid for their sins on the Cross and was resurrected, to inherit eternal life with Christ in Heaven.

One illustration is found in Luke, Chapter 16, Verses 19-31. Here a rich man died in unbelief,

“And in hell he lift up his eyes, being in torments...,” (23) and said, “...send Lazarus, that he may dip the tip of his finger in water, and cool my tongue; for I am tormented in this flame.” (24)

Now the rich man is a believer! Notice what he says in Verse 28.

“For I have five brethren; that he may testify unto them, lest they also come into this place of torment.”

Here this man was in Hell; but, was now a believer, as he wanted someone to go back and warn his five brothers before they joined him in Hell. *Now* a believer but *still in Hell* refutes the lie of Satan’s ministers that, if you believe after going to Hell, you will receive “restitution.” This is enough to prove this false teacher a liar and the Word of God to be true.

For God so loved the world, that he gave his only begotten Son, that whosoever believeth in him should not perish, but have everlasting life. (John 3:16).

XIII. Doctrine

And as it is appointed unto men once to die, but after this the judgment: (not a second chance!). (Hebrews 9:27)

3. “...My God, my God, why hast thou forsaken me?”

Question: In Matthew 27:46, Christ spoke from the Cross, saying “...My God, my God, why hast thou forsaken me?” If Jesus was God in human flesh; why did He ask this question when He should have known the answer! I am a Christian as Jesus is my Savior; and I am asking sincerely. I have inquired of several clergy, but haven’t received a satisfactory answer. I would really appreciate your input on this.

Answer: You are the first in 36 years of ministry to ask me this question. It is an excellent question and I thank you for it.

1. **The Background:** We need a little background to realign our thinking in understanding why Jesus made the statement, “...My God, why hast thou forsaken me?” He did not ask this question because he did not know the answer; because He did. He knew exactly why God had forsaken him, for Isaiah had prophesied in 53:6, “*The LORD (Jehovah) hath laid on him the iniquity of us all.*” Christ knew this was why God had separated Himself from the Son.

One must remember that Christ had been with the Father from eternity past up until the Cross. He would be separated from God, the Father, for 6 hours, while on the Cross, until he submitted Himself (i.e., His body) to die. In Matthew 26:38 He told His disciples “*My soul is exceeding sorrowful, even unto (i.e. until) death.*”

Why did He say “until death?” Because at death he would again be joined with the Father as he had been from eternity past, and would no longer be sorrowful. Dr. Luke in Chapter 23, Verse 46, makes this perfectly clear.

“...he (Jesus) said, Father, into thy hands I commend my Spirit: and having said thus, he gave up the ghost.”

He then took the believing thief with him to Paradise, never

XIII. Doctrine

to be separated from the Father again. In Luke 23:43, Jesus states...

“...To day shalt thou be with me in paradise.”

Christ’s exceeding sorrow was the thought of being separated from the Father. All of the pain, suffering and humiliation he endured, never once brought a complaint from His lips. The crown of thorns thrust upon His head, ripping His skin to pieces, the nails driven into His hands and feet never brought a complaint from the Lord Jesus. He feared nothing they could do to his body. In Matthew 26:39,42,44, He prayed three times,

“O my Father, if it be possible, let this cup pass from me.”

He was not wishing to bypass the Cross, but in dying on the Cross, was there any way to avoid being separated from God. He knew the answer and stated in Verse 39,

“...nevertheless not as I will, but as thou wilt.”

In other words, He loved every human being so much that He was willing to be separated from God, *“being made sin for us, who knew no sin that we might be made the righteousness of God in him.”* (2 Corinthians 5:21). The innocent, suffering for the guilty; the sinless, dying for the condemned.

Christ knew he would be separated from the Father while paying for your sins and mine; making it possible for “whosoever will” to come by faith; and never be separated from God. Therefore, there must be another reason why He cried out, *“My God, why hast thou forsaken me.”* As we continue we shall see the reason.

2. Christ’s last words of challenge and conviction to those who falsely convicted and executed Him. (Matthew 27:46). Peter, on the day of Pentecost addressing the Jews, stated in Acts 2:23,

“...ye have taken, and by WICKED HANDS have crucified and slain:” (i.e. Christ).”

XIII. Doctrine

They could have lifted him up on the Cross with holy hands, as their Messiah, knowing His Resurrection would take place three days later as promised.

Now, let us examine Matthew 27:46 and then proceed to analyze several aspects of this verse which will culminate in answering the original question presented to us.

“And about the ninth hour Jesus cried with a LOUD voice, saying, Eli, Eli, lama sabachthani?” that is to say, My God, my God, why hast thou forsaken me?”

1. “Ninth Hour.” Mark, Chapter 15, gives all three hours of time that Christ was on the Cross. He was crucified at the third hour (i.e. 9 A.M.): (Verse 25). The sixth hour was noon: (Verse 33). The ninth hour was 3 P.M.: (Verse 34). Christ had now been on the Cross for six hours. It was then that he yelled the words

“My God, my God why hast thou forsaken me?”

Next, someone took a sponge of vinegar, put it to his lips to drink in mockery. (Verse 36). Then Jesus cried with a loud voice (Verse 37). What He cried here is only recorded by the Gospel of John in 19:30,

“...It is finished...”

He then said,

“...Father into thy hands I commend my spirit: and having said thus, he gave up the ghost.” (Luke 23:46).

Not one Gospel gives every detail, but a correlation of all the Gospels gives us a chronological order of events precisely as they occurred. Today this would silence the skeptics and agnostics who claim the Gospel writers copied from each other; thus denying the inspiration of the Scriptures.

2. “Loud.” Greek “megas” meaning “exceedingly great, greatest, very great, high and large.”

a. Not only did Matthew record that Christ spoke with LOUD voice, but so did Mark. In Mark 15:34 we find that, “Jesus cried with a LOUD voice.” Dr. Luke also records the

XIII. Doctrine

same in 23:46, “*and when Jesus had cried with a LOUD voice.*”

We might sum up the meaning of this word “megas” when “Jesus cried with a LOUD voice,” i.e., He screamed, or yelled it with as much force as His lungs would put forth. It was evidence His body was not weak, His mind was as sharp as ever, and what he was about to say, he wanted everyone to hear.

3. “*My God, my God.*” The Greek for “God” is “theos” from which we get our English word Theology; i.e., the study of the Doctrine of God. Jesus was shouting to all that were there that the true and living God, “Theos,” Creator of the heavens, Earth, and all humanity, was His Father.

One must remember that the scribes and Pharisees (Jewish religious leaders) claimed that “Theos” was their God also; but, denied that Jesus Christ was the Son of God, the Messiah. John, Chapter 8, records Christ’s encounter with these same sects. Here they accused Christ of being an illegitimate son. Notice in V. 41,

“...Then said they to him (Jesus), We be not born of fornication; we have one Father, even God.” (Greek “theos”).

These claimed to worship “theos,” the God of the Bible, but they were liars. Christ addressed them in V. 42,

“Jesus said unto them, If God (“theos”) were your Father, ye would love me: for I proceeded forth and came from God; neither came I of myself, but he sent me.”

In Verse 19 Christ made it perfectly clear,

“...Ye neither know me, nor my Father: if ye had known me, ye should have known my Father also.”

Isn’t this just like the cults today, who want you to believe how much they love God, but deny Christ’s finished work on the Cross for salvation? Jehovah’s Witnesses deny the Deity of Christ, Mormons the same. Catholicism denies the finished work of Christ for salvation and offers you the dumpster of sacraments for salvation.

Martin Luther in his catechism says he believes in God; but,

XIII. Doctrine

also denies that Christ completed the payment for our sin with His crucifixion, death, and Resurrection. Luther says that baptism washes away your sins, frees you from the devil, makes you a child of God and gives you the Holy Spirit. (Dr. Martin Luther's Small Catechism, Pg. 16, Par. II. (1), "The Blessings of Baptism.")

All these, and more, claim God is their Father. These cult leaders are nothing more than the offspring of the scribes and Pharisees of 2,000 years ago.

In John 8:44, Christ had previously told this same sect of religious unbelievers the truth, that Satan was their god. Here is the record.

“Ye are of your father the devil, and the lust of your father ye will do. He was a murderer (just as you) from the beginning, and abode not in the truth (just as you), because there is no truth in him. When he speaketh a lie (just as you), he speaketh of his own: for he is a liar (just as you), and the father of it.” (“Just as you” is my insert for emphasis.)

Now, just before His death on the Cross, the Lord would scream at the top of his voice, twice, “*My God, my God.*” In other words, “Theos” the true and living God of the Bible, is my God and my Father. This was Christ’s indictment against them for, if “Theos” had really been their God, they would have loved Him instead of crucifying Him. These words, “My God, my God” were intended to pierce the heart, soul and spirit of these religious pretenders, using “Theos,” the God of the Bible to promote their own self-righteousness and deceive the people. I hope one can begin to see that there is a lot more meaning behind these two words than appears on the surface.

(4). “*...Why hast thou forsaken me?*” Did Christ know why He had been forsaken? Absolutely He did! Christ did not make this statement from the standpoint of ignorance; but to challenge the thinking of those who crucified Him to realize He was paying for their sins.

When a person dies in unbelief, their eternal destiny is in the

XIII. Doctrine

Lake of Fire, separated from God for all eternity. Matthew 25:41 states,

“Then shall he say also unto them on the left hand, Depart from me, ye cursed, into everlasting fire, prepared for the devil and his angels.”

Christ was separated from God, paying for their sins, so they would never have to be separated from God, if they would only believe.

The religious leaders were thinking only in humanistic terms, that God had forsaken Him; because He was a pretender, and not the Son of God. The Holy Spirit had prophesied this in Psalm 22:1 and it was spoken by Christ, in fulfillment, on the Cross for a purpose. The purpose was to pierce their minds to understand that you cannot forsake someone you have not previously been with! “Forsaken” in the Greek is “egkatalipo” and means “to leave behind in some place, to desert or forsake.” This is an excellent translation into our English language. But, their hearts were hardened, their eyes were closed and their ears were deaf to the truth.

5. “*Why hast thou forsaken me?*” should have “rung a bell” in their minds. How could God forsake the Son, if He had not been with the Son. The thought-provoking statement bounced off of dead ears. The prophet Isaiah had foretold this as recorded in Matthew 13:14,

“And in them is fulfilled the prophecy of Isaiah, which saith, By hearing ye shall hear, and shall not understand; and seeing ye shall see, and shall not perceive.”

4. Please Explain "Give Not That...Is Holy Unto the Dogs..."

Matthew 7:6

Question: Can you explain the meaning of Matthew 7:6?

“Give not that which is holy unto the dogs, neither cast ye your pearls before swine, lest they trample them under their feet, and turn again and rend you.”

XIII. Doctrine

Answer: This verse is part of what is known as Christ's Sermon on the Mount and is covered in Matthew, Chapters Five to Seven. In Chapter 5:1,2 we are told,

“And seeing the multitudes, he (Christ) went up into a mountain: and when he was set, his disciples came unto him: and he opened his mouth and taught them...”

Two things are apparent: (1). This is the beginning of His sermon, (2). He was teaching the disciples, who in turn were to go and teach others. His sermon in the mountain ended with Chapter 8:1 states,

“When he was come down from the mountain, great multitudes followed him.”

Matthew 7:6 is instruction to the saved, which are his disciples. The practical application is as follows:

1. *“Give not that which is holy unto the dogs...”* “Holy” would be in reference to the Word of God, and “dogs” in reference to the lost.

2. *“...Neither cast ye your pearls before the swine...”* Pearls are those Bible truths, the precious promises. In other words, these are the “gems” contained in God's Word.

3. *“...lest they trample them under their feet, and turn again and rend you.”*

The first part of Matthew 7:6 may seem paradoxical to Matthew 28:19, which tells us to,

“Go ye therefore, and TEACH all nations, baptizing them in the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost.”

The word “teach” is the Greek “MATHETEUEO,” and means “to make disciples.” In other words, win them to Christ and baptize them. “Matheteuo” is used in the transitive sense, meaning “any and everyone,” and in the active voice, meaning “don't stop.”

Now, the last phrase of Matthew 7:6 explains why there are some people to whom we are not obligated to continue to give

XIII. Doctrine

forth the precious Word of God. These are they who have heard God's Word, rejected it, and forbid hearing it from anyone again. These are those who God warns the Christian to avoid. They are described in Psalm 1:1 as "*sinners, ungodly, and scornful,*" and verse 6 of this Psalm gives their demise, "*...but the way of the ungodly shall perish.*" Their response is described as threefold:

1. "*Trample... under their feet.*" Some time back I heard my wife's foot stamp on the kitchen floor several times. I hurried to the kitchen to see what was the matter. She had spotted a spider crawling across the floor and wanted to make sure it was dead. One thump would have been enough, but she hates spiders, so it got several more thumps! The word "*trample*" in the Greek means "to reject with disdain." They will become outraged, as they have a feeling of contempt and aversion for the Word of God which they feel is beneath their dignity and pride!

(2). "*Turn again.*" This could imply that they have rejected God's Word at least once; and maybe several times.

(3). "*And rend you.*" "Rend" in the Greek means "to twist, break forth, tear, and etc.

Putting these three descriptions together comes out to something like this: These people do not want the Gospel as it is an insult to their dignity and pride. Therefore, they will trample you under their feet as often as it takes to silence your testimony. They will "rend you;" that is, they will break forth and burst out of control of their emotions of hatred, even to the point of physical harm. In other words, avoid these Christ-haters and utilize your time in a more productive way!

Peter uses a reference to the lost as "dogs" and "swine" in 2 Peter 2:21,22.

"For it had been better for them (the lost) not to have known the way of righteousness, than, after they had known it, to turn from the holy commandment delivered unto them. (21)

"But it is happened unto them according to the true proverb, The dog is turned to his own vomit again; and the sow that was

XIII. Doctrine

washed (on the outside, with a religious veneer of self-righteousness) to her wallowing in the mire.” (22)

We thank the Lord Jesus Christ for paying for our sin on the Cross and offering Salvation to anyone who will receive it by faith.

He that believeth on the Son hath everlasting life: and he that believeth not the Son shall not see life; but the wrath of God abideth on him.” - John 3:36

XIV. Eternal Security

1. *Is It Impossible for Those Who "Fall Away" to Be Saved?*

Hebrews 6:4-6

Question: What is meant by Hebrews 6:4-6? Does that mean that those who fall away can never be restored to repentance?

Answer: This portion of Scripture is attempted to be used by some to show that a born-again believer can lose his salvation. That is not what Hebrews 6:4-6 teaches. If it were true, then a person who lost his salvation could never be saved again, because Verse 4 says "*it is impossible* " for those who were saved to again be "*renew them again unto repentance*" (v.6).

Now...let us see the very simple lesson these verses *do* teach. First, this passage is speaking of the saved as they

... "have tasted of the heavenly gift, and were made PARTAKERS OF THE HOLY GHOST " (4)

In Verse 6, "seeing they crucify" would be better translated, "*While they are crucifying to themselves the Son of God afresh, and put Him to an open shame.*"

How does a Christian do this? By living a life that is disgraceful to the Lord. Until a person changes his mind about the way he is living and decides to "*walk (obey) in the light as he is in the light,*" there can be no fellowship. (1 John 1:7.) Hebrews 6 is speaking of *fellowship*, not *sonship*. Hebrews 6:1 makes this clear.

"Therefore leaving the principles of the doctrine of Christ (our salvation), let us go on unto perfection..." (maturity).

After salvation, we are admonished to "*...grow in grace, and in the knowledge of our Lord and Savior Jesus Christ...*" (2 Peter 3:18).

In Hebrews 6:7 the Holy Spirit uses the Earth which absorbs the rain; and then produces the herbs, as an object lesson for the Christian. God wants the Christian to absorb His Word; and live a life that is pleasing to Him, and a blessing to others.

XIV. Eternal Security

In Verse 8, the lesson is that the "thorns and briars" in a Christian's life will be burned at the Judgment Seat of Christ. 1 Corinthians 3:11-15 can be referenced to Hebrews 6:7,8.

1 Corinthians 3	Hebrews 6
"If any man's work abide which he hath built thereupon, he shall receive a reward. " - 1 Corinthians 3:14	"For the earth which drinketh in the rain that cometh oft upon it, and bringeth forth herbs meet for them by whom it is dressed, receiveth blessing from God:" - Hebrews 6:7
"If any man's work shall be burned, he shall suffer loss: but HE HIMSELF SHALL BE SAVED; yet so as by fire." - 1 Corinthians 3:15	"But that which beareth thorns and briars <i>is</i> rejected, and <i>is</i> nigh unto cursing; whose end <i>is</i> to be burned." - Hebrews 6:8

The bad works burn; but, the Christian is still saved. It is only the thorns and briars that are rejected and burned; not the Christian who is "Saved, yet so as by fire."

2. *Does Romans 11:20,21 Mean You Can Lose Your Salvation?*

Question: Do the verses in Romans 11:20,21 mean you can lose your salvation?

"Well; because of unbelief they (Israel) were broken off, and thou (Gentiles) standest by faith. Be not highminded but fear. For if God spared not the natural branches (Israel), take heed lest he also spare not thee (Gentiles)."

Answer: Romans, Chapters 9 to 11, are speaking about Israel as a nation. Chapter 9: Israel in the Past. Chapter 10: Israel in the Present. Chapter 11: Israel in the Future. Christ, the Messiah was promised to Israel as their king. Isaiah 9:6 told Israel,

XIV. Eternal Security

"For unto us a child (Jesus) is born (His humanity), unto us a son (Christ, His deity) is given: and the government shall be upon his shoulder: and his name shall be called Wonderful, Counselor, The mighty God, The everlasting Father, The Prince of Peace."

Isaiah, in 7:14, said to Israel,

"Therefore the Lord himself shall give you a sign; Behold, a virgin shall conceive and bear a son, and shall call his name Immanuel (God with us)."

All the Gospels record Jesus Christ offering Himself to Israel as their long-awaited Messiah, King and Savior; but, as a nation, they rejected Him. In John 1:11 we have the record,

"He (Christ) came unto his own (Israel) and his own (Israel) received him not."

In Matthew 27:22,

"...They all say unto him (Pilate), let him (Christ) be crucified."

Because of their unbelief, they were dispersed throughout the world in 70 A.D.

In the meantime, the saved Gentiles, who are the "*wild olive tree*" of Romans 11:24, have the religious privileges of taking the Gospel to the Jews and the rest of the world. During this Church Age, from Pentecost to the Rapture, God is not dealing with any one nation in particular; but, is calling out a people for His name, regardless of nationality. (Galatians 3:28).

After the Rapture, Israel will face horrible persecutions at the hands of the Antichrist. Then, the Lord returns to establish His Kingdom; thus fulfilling His promises of blessing and preservation to His chosen people, the nation of Israel. This is what Romans 11:23,24 is saying,

"...for God is able to graff them (Israel) in again (i.e. as a nation). (23 ...the natural branches, be grafted into their own olive tree (24)."

The olive tree represents Israel's religious privileges; therefore, representing Israel as a restored nation. (Ezekiel

XIV. Eternal Security

37:21,22). Israel will worship the Lord Jesus Christ as their Messiah, King, and Savior; thus, fulfilling Romans 11:26,

"And so all Israel shall be saved: as it is written, There shall come out of Sion the Deliverer, and shall turn away ungodliness from Jacob (Israel)."

Romans 11 proves that God is faithful to His Word. As the nation of Israel is made up of individuals, the majority never believed and are in Hell today; as they never were saved. Those 3,000 that did believe on Pentecost (Acts 2:41) are in Heaven today.

As a nation, Israel has been, and will be, chastened at the hand of God; but, in the end, it is still a nation. When a person accepts Jesus Christ as their Savior they become a child of God. (John 1:12). When they sin, God can chasten; but, they are still a Christian, still a son of God. (Hebrews 12:5-7).

No, you can never lose your salvation!

XV. God, The Father

1. Are There Lies in the Bible?

Question: Does the Bible have any lies in it?

Answer: Yes, God's word records the lies of many people; but God, Himself, does not lie. In 1 Samuel 15, Saul lied to Samuel about destroying the Amelekites.

God, in the Book of Esther, recorded the wicked lies of Hamaan to the king in his quest to destroy the Jews.

In Jeremiah 27:14-16, the lies of the false prophets are recorded.

In Jeremiah 28, the lies of Hananiah are revealed.

In Jeremiah 29:24-32, the lies of Shemaiah are recorded.

In Genesis 3:4, Satan contradicted God and lied to Eve saying, "*Ye shall not surely die*"; but, she did.

In Genesis 12, God recorded Abraham's lie to the Egyptian king that Sarah was his sister, and not his wife.

Yes, God records the lies of people, BUT He never lies TO His people. Satan is still propagating his lies that mankind evolved from a monkey; there is no Hell; death ends it all and that Christ is not the Savior; that you are your own God, and etc. This is also the New Age Philosophy.

In Romans 3:4 we are told

"Let God be true but every man a liar;"

"It is better to trust in the LORD than to put confidence in man"

-Psalm 118:8

Satan has taken many into Hell through his lies (2 Corinthians 4:4); BUT, God never lies!

"For God so loved the world, that he gave his only begotten Son, that whosoever believeth in him should not perish, but have everlasting life." - John 3:16

XV. God, The Father

2. *Is There Anything God Cannot Do?*

Question: If God is omniscient and omnipotent, is there anything He cannot do?

Answer: Yes, there are many things God cannot do, as He declared He would not do them in His Word, the Bible. Here are just a few of hundreds that are stated in His word.

1. Genesis 9:15,16: mankind will never be destroyed again by a universal flood.
2. Jeremiah 31:35-37: The Jewish race will never cease to exist.
3. Micah 5:2: God could not allow Christ to be born in any other city in the world except Bethlehem of Judea.
4. Psalm 9:17: God cannot allow the unsaved to go to Heaven.
5. John 3:16: God can never send a Christian to Hell.
6. 1 Corinthians 3:15: God can never revoke a Christian's salvation because they are not serving Him.
7. John 5:24: God cannot withhold everlasting life from anyone who will receive Jesus Christ as their personal Savior.

"These things have I written unto you that believe on the name of the Son of God; that ye may know that ye have eternal life and that ye may believe on the name of the Son of God. - 1 John 5:13

3. *Is God a Respector of Persons?*

Galatians 3:28

Question: Galatians 3:28 states, "*There is neither Jew nor Greek, there is neither bond nor free, there is neither male nor female: for you are all one in Christ Jesus.*" Does this mean we should have the same name or respect all person's choice of a name?

Answer: If you go back to Galatians 3:26, you will see that only those who have put their faith in Jesus Christ are the children of God. This agrees perfectly with John 1:12. Therefore,

XV. God, The Father

we are all "one"; that is, everyone who has their faith in Christ is a child of God. This is our position in Christ, which will never change; because, you can never lose your salvation or sonship. (John 10:27-29).

Galatians 3:27 is spiritual baptism. When we trust Christ as our Savior, we are placed into the Spiritual Body of Christ. (1 Corinthians 12:13). Remember a very simple principle with reference to baptism. Whenever you find "baptism into Christ or His Body," it is always spiritual baptism. When you find "baptism unto Christ's death," it is water baptism.

Now for Galatians 3:28, the verse in question. From Revelation 2:17 and 3:12, many scholars believe that each Christian will have a new name of identification in Heaven. This will go along with everything else that will be new to them, including a new resurrected body. (Philippians 3:20,21).

Most importantly, in reference to Galatians 3:28, notice Acts 10:34.

"...Of a truth I perceive that God is no respecter of persons."

In other words, no matter what your nationality, position in society, or your sex; when you put your faith in Christ you are all ONE. That is, all are a child of God, all are a part of the Body of Christ. In John 3:16, "*God so loved the WORLD,*" showing He is no respecter of persons.

4. Is God Truly A Righteous Judge?

Question: Is there a contradiction in Genesis 4:4, 6:8; Proverbs 8:35, 18:22, Luke 1:30; which appear as favoritism from God); and Romans 2:11, 1 Timothy 5:21, and James 2:9; which say the Lord does not show favoritism and tells us not to show favoritism? This has been causing me to doubt.

Answer: These are not contradictions at all. Remember, God is not a respecter of persons. (Acts 10:34). He judges according to truth (Romans 2:2), and is a righteous judge (2 Timothy 4:8).

Back to Genesis 4:4 where God did not respect Cain's

XV. God, The Father

offering; because it was a self-righteous offering, produced by his own works and labor. Abel brought the blood offering of an animal sacrifice (Hebrews 10:4); which, in type, pointed to Calvary; where Christ would shed his own life and blood for the sins of the world (Ephesians 1:7). God had rejected their parent's fig leaves; and Adam and Eve accepted the covering of skins that God provided through the shedding of the blood of innocent animals to obtain the skins. (Hebrews 9:22).

God would have been unjust to have accepted Cain's sacrifice, which was of his own effort. This is exactly what the Scribes and Pharisees did, in trying to justify themselves with their own self-righteousness. (Luke 16:15 and 18:9). And it is exactly what many are doing today by trusting their church membership, their popularity in the community, their baptism, confirmation, etc. All are rejected for salvation by the Lord, the Righteous Judge (Ephesians 2:8,9, Titus 3:5).

You cite Proverbs 8:35. Read also Verse 36, which says those that hate God love death. In Verse 35, God says that

"For whoso findeth me findeth life, and shall obtain favour of the LORD."

This is proof God is not a respecter of persons, but judges righteously. What would you think of God if He rewarded the wicked, and cursed the righteous? This is exactly what some have done, and still do today (James 2:1-4).

God denounces these acts, as stated in Isaiah 5:20,21,23,

"Woe unto them that call evil good, and good evil; that put darkness for light, and light for darkness; and put bitter for sweet, and sweet for bitter!" (20) "Woe unto them that are wise in their own eyes, and prudent in their own sight." (21) "Which justify the wicked for reward, and take away the righteousness of the righteous from him!" (23)

Romans 2:11,

"For there is no respect of persons with God."

...is proved by John 3:16.

XV. God, The Father

“For God so loved the world, that he gave his only begotten son, that whosoever believeth in him should not perish, but have everlasting life.”

John 3:36 shows God’s love *and* justice. God would be unjust if he let the unbeliever into Heaven and sent the believer to Hell. Such is not the case!

Concerning 1 Timothy 5:21, the principle is the same. Read all of Chapter 5. The instructions given were to be followed without showing any partiality whatsoever. James 2:9 is explained by the preceding verses. John 7:24 states,

“Judge not according to the appearance, but judge righteous judgment.”

Taking verses in their surrounding context can remove much doubt! Context! Context! Context!

5. Does God Chasten Christians Because He Hates Them?

Question: When God chastens Christians, does He punish them because of hate?

Answer: When someone refers to God's bringing of adversity into a believer’s life; the King James translation uses the words “chastening” and “chastisement.” Some of your modern versions use the words “punish” and “punishment” in the same verses. There are three different, but related, Greek words involved. The Greek word “paideia,” a noun, is found six times in the New Testament. In the King James it is translated “chastening” in Hebrews 12:5,7,11. It is translated “chastisement” in Hebrews 12:8; “instruction” in 2 Timothy 3:16 and “nurture” in Ephesians 6:4. Therefore, the Greek “padeia” refers to “upbringing, training and instruction.” The basic idea of this word is that of discipline which is associated with training and education.

The verb “paideuo” is found thirteen times in the New Testament and is translated in the King James as follows:

1. “Chasten” in 1 Corinthians 11:32; 2 Corinthians 6:9;

XV. God, The Father

Hebrews 12:6,7,10; and Revelation 3:19

2. “Chastise” in Luke 23:16,22.
3. “Instruct” in 2 Timothy 2:25
4. “Taught” in Acts 22:3; Titus 2:12
5. “Learn” in 1 Timothy 1:20
6. “Was learned” in Acts 7:22

As a verb, it has to do with the act of instructing, bringing up, educating and training. Like the noun “paideia,” the verb “paideuo” involves CORRECTION; therefore, being a part of the process of training and educating. Now, the third Greek word “paideutes” is used in reference to the PERSON who does the training or the upbringing. The word appears twice in the New Testament, and is translated in the King James as “instructor,” in Romans 2:20 and “which corrected” in Hebrews 12:9.

Now, let's examine Hebrew 12:5-11 where the Greek words appear 8 times.

“And ye have forgotten the exhortation which speaketh unto you as unto children, My son, despise not thou the chastening (paideia) of the Lord, nor faint when thou art rebuked of him:”
(5)

“For whom the Lord loveth he chasteneth (paideuo), and scourgeth every son whom he receiveth.” (6)

“If ye endure chastening (paideia), God dealeth with you as with sons, for what son is he whom the father chasteneth (paideuo) not?” (7)

“But if ye be without chastisement (padeia), whereof all are partakers, then ye are bastards, and not sons.” (8)

“Furthermore we have had fathers of our flesh which corrected (paideutes) us, and we gave them reverence: shall we not much rather be in subjection unto the Father of spirits, and live?” (9)

“For they verily for a few days chastened (paideuo) us after their own pleasure; but he for our profit, that we might be partakers of his holiness.” (10)

“Now no chastening (paideia) for the present seemeth to be joyous, but grievous: nevertheless afterward it yieldeth the

XV. God, The Father

peaceable fruit of righteousness unto them which are exercised thereby.” (11)

Another word for “chastise” would be “discipline.” I believe that “discipline” would probably be a better translation of the Greek words than “chastise” or “punish.” “Punish” is more negative; whereas, it involves correction for wrong doing. “Chastise” or “discipline” has a more positive purpose, which is to motivate a person to change his behavior. (Hebrews 12:10). “Discipline” would, therefore, include a penalty for disobedience and disgraceful actions; BUT, it also has a teaching purpose. It is not an end in itself.

Psychiatrist Dr. William Glasser in his book, *Reality Therapy*, distinguishes between “discipline” and “punishment.” In his chapter, “The Treatment of Seriously Delinquent Adolescent Girls,” Dr. Glasser writes: “Girls are willing to accept discipline; but, not punishment: they differentiate between the two by seeing whether the disciplining person shows anger and gets satisfaction by exercising power.” (P.78).

It is very true that God hates the sins committed by His children; BUT, He does not hate His children. God does not chasten believers because He receives satisfaction from it, or wants to display His power. His chastening is to bring us back to where we left the Lord, so we can glorify Him with our lives and He can bless us with His blessings. God disciplines and permits trials and adversities in our lives to make us stronger as Christians, knowing,

“That the trial of your faith is more precious than of gold that perisheth, though it be tried with fire, might be found unto praise and honour and glory at the appearing of Jesus Christ.” - 1 Peter 1:7

God’s discipline is also to keep believers from bringing undue heartache into their own lives. God hates sin because He knows how it can destroy a Christian’s life. God condemns the sins we do in the flesh while not living in obedience to the Holy Spirit. (Romans 8:1). BUT, He does not condemn the believer!

XV. God, The Father

All of our sins, even those committed after we are a Christian, are eternally paid for by the shed blood of the Lord Jesus Christ. John 5:24 makes this perfectly clear,

“He that heareth my word, and believeth on him that sent me (Christ), hath everlasting life, AND SHALL NOT COME INTO CONDEMNATION; but is passed from death unto life.”

We are not serving an angry God who delights in punishing us every time we fail; but, rather, a God of love and grace who bore all of our condemnation and only disciplines us for our own good and His glory. He corrects us for wrongdoing; but, His purpose is to bring about more responsible behavior from us which will be glorifying to Him. Wouldn't it be wonderful if every Christian purpose in their mind the words of one of our familiar songs!

“How could I do less,
Than give Him my best,
And live for Him completely,
After all He's done for me.”

XVI. Heaven

1. *Did the Old Testament Saints Go to Heaven?*

Question: Did people in the Old Testament go to Heaven the same as Christians do today?

Answer: No, the saved went to "Abraham's Bosom" (a Jewish term for Paradise); and the lost went to Torment, both located in the center of the Earth. Luke 16:19-31 describes the two places. Matthew's prophecy concerning Christ lets us know that Paradise is in the center of the Earth.

In Luke 23:43, Christ is speaking to the thief next to Him, who had acknowledged Him as the Savior. He said, *"Today shalt thou be with me in PARADISE."* Matthew 12:40 lets us know the location of Paradise,

"For as Jonas was three days and three nights in the whale's belly; so shall the Son of man be three days and three nights in the HEARTH OF THE EARTH."

After Christ's Resurrection, He appeared to Mary and said, *"Touch me not; for I am not yet ASCENDED to my Father."* (John 20:17). At this time Christ ascended to Heaven and anointed the Mercy Seat within the Holy Place with His own blood.

Hebrews 9:12 states,

"...But by his own blood he entered in once into the holy place, having obtained eternal redemption for us."

He then returned to Earth and walked 40 days before His final Ascension. (Acts 1:3, 9-11).

At His Ascension, he emptied the saved out of Paradise in the heart of the Earth, taking them to Heaven with Him. Ephesians 4:8 makes this clear:

"Wherefore he saith, When he ascended up on high, he led captivity captive, and gave gifts unto men."

Paradise is no longer in the center of the Earth, but is now in Heaven. This is revealed in 2 Corinthians 12:2,4 which describes

XVI. Heaven

a man,

"...such an one caught up to the third heaven. How that he was caught up into paradise..."

With this in mind we can understand what Christ meant in John 14:2 when he stated:

"In my Father's house (Heaven) are many mansions: If it were not so I would have told you. I go to prepare a place for you."

He didn't go to *build* the mansions. The use of the word "are" reveals the mansions were *already there*. He went to the Cross, shedding His sinless blood; then, ascending and anointing the Holy Place, thus preparing Heaven to receive the saved. Ephesians 1:7,

"In whom we have redemption through His blood, the forgiveness of sins, according to the riches of his grace."

Now we, like Paul, can say,

"We are confident, I say, and willing rather to be absent from the body, and to be present with the Lord." - 2 Corinthians 5:8

When a Christian dies, today, it is just "a change of atmosphere." The soul and spirit, the real "You," goes immediately to Heaven to be in the presence of the Lord. The body goes to the grave to await the Rapture. (1 Corinthians 15:51-53; 1 Thessalonians 4:13-18).

2. *Will We Be Angels in Heaven?*

Matthew 22:28,30

Question: In Matthew 22:28,30, Jesus says we will be as the angels in Heaven. Will we actually be angels and not know our husbands or wives in Heaven?

Answer: Matthew 22:28,30 says,

"Therefore in the Resurrection whose wife shall she be of the seven? for they all had her." (28) "For in the Resurrection they

XVI. Heaven

neither marry, nor are given in marriage, but are as the angels of God in heaven." (30)

The question in this passage is about "marriage in heaven." The Sadducees (unbelievers) had given Christ a hypothetical question concerning a woman who had seven husbands. This in no way teaches that we are going to be angels when we get to Heaven. It only indicates that, in Heaven, our relationship to Christ and others will be on a much higher plane than our marriage relationship while on Earth. In fact, we are told that we shall judge angels. (1 Corinthians 6:3).

These are the most wicked angels that brought about the flood. (Genesis 6). Peter describes them in 2 Peter 2:4,

"For if God spared not the angels that sinned, but cast them down to hell, and delivered them into chains of darkness, to be reserved unto judgment;"

Angels are also appointed to minister to the saved,

"Are they (the angels) not all ministering spirits, sent forth to minister for them who shall be heirs of salvation?" (Hebrews 1:14)

In Heaven we will still be the person we were on Earth, only without our sinful body. We will have a new glorified body, like that of our Lord Jesus Christ. Philippians 3:20,21 tells us,

"For our conversation (the Greek is "citizenship") is in heaven; from whence also we look for the Saviour, the Lord Jesus Christ. Who shall change our vile (i.e., "sinful") body, that it may be fashioned like unto his (Christ's) glorious body..."

We have no record of angels ever marrying, as there would be no one to marry! They are all male. We have no record of any angels in the Bible being women or playing on their harps. This is contrary to much religious art we have today, and many portrayals on television.

Some time back, a man took exception to the fact that there are no women angels. He told me that he knew for sure his wife was an angel; because she was always "up in the air, harping

XVI. Heaven

about something!"

There is no reason to believe that we will not know each other in Heaven and rejoice over the previous relationships and experiences we have had. In Matthew 17:1-4, Peter, James, and John recognized Moses and Elijah, even though both had been dead for hundreds of years.

Only Jesus Christ made it possible for you and I to escape the torment and total darkness of a literal Hell (2 Peter 2:17), so we could spend all eternity with Him.

"For the wages of sin is death; but the gift of God is eternal life through Jesus Christ our Lord." (Romans 6:23)

3. *Will We Have a New Name in Heaven?*

Revelation 2:17

Question: Would you please give me your explanation on Revelation 2:17.

"He that hath an ear, let him hear what the spirit saith unto the churches; To him that overcometh will I give to eat of the hidden manna, and will give him a white stone, and in the stone a new name written, which no man knoweth saving he that receiveth it."

Answer: I believe the best way to understand this verse is to correlate each aspect of this verse with other Scripture. Therefore, we will examine each section of the verse; and, in so doing, gain a the whole picture of what the verse is presenting to us as Christians.

1. "...*To him that overcometh...*" The overcomer is a Christian who, by faith, has trusted Jesus Christ as his Savior. 1 John 5:4,5 explains the word "overcometh."

"For whatsoever is born of God OVERCOMETH the world: and this is the victory that overcometh the world, even our faith. Who is he that overcometh the world, but he that believeth that Jesus is the Son of God."

2 "...*Eat of the hidden manna...*" The manna that sustained

XVI. Heaven

Israel in the wilderness is a type of the Lord Jesus Christ and His word. John 6:32, 33,35 clarifies this: (V. 32)

“Then Jesus said unto them,...Moses gave you not that bread from heaven; but my Father giveth you the true bread from heaven.” (32) “For the bread of God is he (Christ) which cometh down from heaven, and giveth life unto the world.” (33) “And Jesus said unto them, I am the bread of life: he that cometh to me shall never hunger; and he that believeth on me shall never thirst.” (35)

Christians feast on the word of God as a source of knowledge, strength, and growth. They love and desire the word of God. On the other hand, there are those who have no desire for spiritual truth; therefore, God’s word, the Bible, is of no interest whatsoever to them. Matthew 13:15 explains why the word of God, or manna, is hidden from many.

“For this people’s heart is waxed gross, and their ears are dull of hearing, AND THEIR EYES THEY HAVE CLOSED; lest at any time they should see with their eyes, and hear with their ears, and should understand with their heart, and should be converted, and I should heal them.”

3. *“...And will give him (the Christian) a white stone...”*

A. The white stone represents the Lord Jesus Christ. White is showing us His sinlessness. In Matthew 27:19, Pilate’s wife said,

“...Have thou nothing to do with that JUST MAN...”

Pilate himself stated three times,

“...I find NO FAULT IN HIM...” - John 18:38; 19:4,6

Judas himself declared in Matthew 27:4,

“...I have betrayed the INNOCENT BLOOD (i.e., Christ)...”

Jesus said of Himself that He is the Stone that Israel rejected, in Matthew 21:42.

XVI. Heaven

“Jesus saith unto them, Did ye never read in the scriptures (Ps. 118:22), The stone (Christ) which the builders (Israel) rejected, the same is become the head of the corner...”

2 Corinthians 5:21 clearly states,

“For he hath made him (Christ) to be sin for us, who knew no sin; that we might be made the righteousness of God in him.”

B. Remember, this whole verse is in reference to our salvation. Now, a promise is given in Revelation 3:5 to those that are saved (i.e. the overcomers).

“He that overcometh, the same shall be clothed in WHITE RAIMENT; and I will not blot out his name out of the Book of Life...”

“Shall be” is future tense, letting us know that we will receive this white robe upon entering our home in Heaven. The white robe is a testimony that I am here because of the righteousness of Jesus Christ and not because of my own works.

“For by grace are ye saved through faith; and that not of yourselves: it is the gift of God: Not of works, lest any man should boast.”- Ephesians 2:8,9

4. “...In the stone a new name written...” Many have wondered if they will have a different name when they enter Heaven. The answer is “No.” You will be known in Heaven by the same name as you are known on Earth. In Matthew 17:3, at the Transfiguration, you will recall that, “...there appeared unto them Moses and Elias talking with him (Christ).” Moses and Elijah had died hundreds of years earlier; but, now appearing at the Transfiguration, they are still known by their earthly names.

In Luke 16:19-31 we have the literal account of the death of Lazarus who was saved, and a rich man who was lost. Lazarus was taken to Paradise (Abraham’s Bosom), and the lost man to Torment. Between the two was a great gulf, making it impossible for the man in Torment to get to the Paradise side. As you read this account, notice that the lost man is speaking to Abraham, who physically died hundreds of years before. But...Abraham is

XVI. Heaven

still known as Abraham on into eternity and will be known by his earthly name forever.

a. The Greek word for “new” in Revelation 2:17 is “kainos.” It means “new as to form or quality, that of a different nature from what is contrasted as old.” This same Greek word translated “new” in 2 Corinthians 5:17 is in reference to the time we accepted Christ as our Savior.

“Therefore if any man be in Christ, he is a new (Gr. Kainos) creature (creation): old things are passed away; behold, all things are become new.”

In other words, at salvation, in God’s eyes we are a brand new creation and everything in our past is forgotten as we start our new life in Christ Jesus. At this time our name is eternally sealed in the Lamb’s Book of Life with the promise it will never, for any reason, be removed. Revelation 3:5 makes this perfectly clear,

“He that overcometh, the same shall be clothed in white raiment; AND I WILL NOT BLOT OUT HIS NAME OUT OF THE BOOK OF LIFE, but I will confess his name before my Father, and before his angels.”

Therefore, at salvation, Heaven receives another new name to join the ranks of all those previously saved. Not a different name, but a new name will be placed on Heaven’s rolls because of bearing Christ’s name, that being “Christian.”

5. “...A new name written, which no man knoweth saving he that receiveth it.” There are, at salvation, only two who know you are saved. That is Christ and yourself, excluding the heavenly host. In Luke 10:20, Christ addressed the Seventy he had commissioned with these words,

“Notwithstanding in this rejoice not, that the spirits are subject unto you; but rather rejoice, BECAUSE YOUR NAMES ARE WRITTEN IN HEAVEN.”

Luke 15:7 lets us know that those in Heaven are aware of what is going on down here.

XVI. Heaven

“I say unto you, that likewise JOY shall be IN HEAVEN over one sinner that repenteth...”

a. God’s will for the new Christian, is to tell others about Jesus Christ. It may be summarized in Romans 1:14-16.

(1). Verse 14. *“I am debtor both to the Greeks (the wise and cultured) and to the Barbarians (uneducated, of low degree); both to the wise and to the unwise.”*

(2). Verse 15. *“So, as much as in me is, I am ready to preach (announce) the gospel to you that are at Rome also.”*

(3). Verse 16. *“For I am not ashamed of the gospel of Christ: for it is the power of God unto salvation to everyone that believeth; to the Jew first, and also to the Greek (the Gentiles).”*

b. The new Christian’s prayer should be Ephesians 6:19.

“And for me, that utterance may be given unto me, that I may open my mouth boldly, to make known the mystery of the gospel.”

6. Many and varied are the interpretations of this Revelation 2:17. In one commentary alone the writer gave four different interpretations of various commentators; and, then, one of his own. I have found that allowing one Scripture to shed light upon other Scripture is the best way to ascertain what a certain verse is teaching us. This I have attempted to do.

Much more could be written, especially concerning the Lamb’s Book of Life, in which all names have been recorded. Those that die without Christ will have their name blotted out of the book. This in itself is a whole, separate study. I hope this brief analysis will be of some help to you. May God bless you in your continued study of His word.

XVII. Hell

1. *Is It Dark in Hell?*

Question: One place in the Bible says that Hell is a place of total darkness; but in Luke 16 the man in Hell is able to see. Is this a contradiction in the Bible?

Answer: There are basically three Greek words that are translated "Hell" in your King James Translation. The reason is that "Hell" is our English word that designates a place of punishment or torment for the lost; whether it be mankind, fallen angels, or demons. Every Christian should have a *Strong's Concordance*, which gives the Greek word that our English is translated from, along with a simple explanation of its meaning.

In the New Testament, the three Greek words translated "Hell" are "Hades", "Geenna", and the verb, "tartaroo".

1. "Hades" is the temporary abode of the Lost where there does not appear to be total darkness; as the man in Luke 16 could see. Notice in Luke 16:23,24.

"And in hell (gr. Hades) he lift up his eyes, being in torments, and seeth Abraham afar off, and Lazarus in his bosom."(23) And he cried and said, Father Abraham, have mercy on me, and send Lazarus, that he may dip the tip of his finger in water, and cool my tongue, for I am tormented in this flame (24)."

2. The Greek word "Geenna," translated "Hell" in our English; is the permanent abode of the Lost. Those in "Hades," now, will stand at the Great White Throne Judgment; and, then, will be cast into "Hell," i.e., "Geenna," for all time and eternity. "Geenna" is the place described as "outer darkness" in Matthew 8:12 and 22:13. In the Parable of Matthew 22:13 we are told:

"...Bind him hand and foot, and take him away, and cast him into outer darkness; there shall be weeping and gnashing of teeth."

It is also described as a place of everlasting fire in Matthew 25:41. Also check Mark 9:44,46,48.

3. The Greek word "tartaroo" is also translated "Hell" in our

XVII. Hell

English; and is found only once in the Greek New Testament, that being in 2 Peter 2:4. Here the most wicked angels that fell with Satan are chained in DARKNESS; until they are cast, at a later time, into the everlasting fire of "Geenna. Here is the Record:

"If God spared not the angels that sinned, but cast them down to Hell (tartaroo), and delivered them into chains of darkness, to be reserved unto judgment;"

Concerning these same angels, Jude 6 stated:

"...he hath reserved in everlasting chains under darkness unto the judgment of the great day"

As you can see, there is no contradiction, they are different places as are identified by the Greek words.

XVIII. Homosexuality

1. *Did God Create Homosexuals?*

Question: I have heard gay and lesbian persons say that God created them that way. Is there anything in the Bible to prove this?

Answer: God has never created someone as a homosexual. They have chosen that perverted lifestyle. In Leviticus 20:13 we read:

"If a man also lie with mankind, as he lieth with a woman, both of them have committed an abomination: They shall surely be put to death; their blood shall be upon them."

God wanted Israel to be a clean nation, free of this perversion. In Deuteronomy 22:5 we are told:

"The woman shall not wear that which pertaineth unto a man, neither shall a man put on a woman's garment: for all that do so are abomination unto the Lord thy God."

This is God's opinion of the "cross dressing" Hollywood takes so much delight in.

Asa, king of Judah, did God's will in 1 Kings 15:11,12...

"And Asa did that which was right in the eyes of the Lord...and he took away the sodomites out of the land..."

In the New Testament we are warned in Romans 1:26-28...

"...for even the women did change the natural use (man & wife) into that (woman with woman) which is against nature (the way they were created) (26): and likewise also the man leaving the natural use of the woman (husband & wife) burned in their lust one toward another; men with men working that which is unseemly (Unbelievable!) (27)...and even as they did not like to retain God in their knowledge, God gave them over to a reprobate mind to do those things which are not convenient (28)."

Read the rest of Romans 1 and you will see that God does not condone homosexual behavior of any kind, and would not

XVIII. Homosexuality

have created anyone that way. Here is God's opinion of those actions.

1. God destroyed Sodom. The city was completely taken over by homosexuals. In Genesis 19:4 they completely surrounded Lot's home, and in Verse 5 they wanted the men to come out *"That we may know them."* This was not just a casual hand shake; but, "know" in a carnal way. In Verse 7 Lot said, *"...Do not so wickedly."* Their perversion was wicked. In Luke 17:29, God *"rained fire and brimstone from heaven and destroyed them all."* This is God's opinion of homosexuality!

2. In the Old Testament, the homosexuals were to be put to death; as God knew how they would corrupt society and pervert a nation against God. (Leviticus 20:13). Even some high schools have "Opposite Sex Day" where boys can dress up as girls and girls like boys, and ignore God's Word in Deuteronomy 22:5. All with the blessings of the teachers and staff.

3. The Lesbian. In Romans 1:26 God describes their activities and calls them "vile."

"For this cause God gave them up unto vile (wicked or evil) affections: for even their women did change the natural use (wife and mother) into that which is against nature."

4. The Homosexual. In Romans 1:27 God says,

*"And likewise also the men, leaving the natural use of the woman (being a husband and father), **BURNED IN THEIR LUST** one toward another; men with men working that which is unseemly and receiving in themselves that recompense of **THEIR ERROR** which was meet."*

In Romans 1:27c is a chilling description of consequences for those who practice these perversions. *"...receiving in themselves that recompense (Aids?) of **THEIR ERROR** which was meet."*

In Verse 28 God says they have a reprobate mind.

5. 1 Kings 15:11,12 describes Asa, king of Judah, who *"...did that which was right in the eyes of the Lord...and he took*

XVIII. Homosexuality

away the Sodomites out of the land."

6. Many years later the Sodomites had infiltrated Judah again. King Josiah took action to bring the nation back to worshipping the Lord. In 2 Kings 23:7,

"And he (Josiah) brake down the houses of the Sodomites that were by the house of the Lord..."

7. In Corinth some were saved by trusting Jesus Christ as their Savior. In 1 Corinthians 6:9, "effeminate" is pertaining to homosexuals and lesbians. In Verse 11 we are told,

"And such were some of you; but ye are washed; but ye are sanctified, but ye are justified in the name of the Lord Jesus Christ, and by the Spirit of our God:"

8. We are to witness to the homosexuals. Christ died for them, too; so they could have eternal life. But, the Christian is not to be brainwashed into condoning their lifestyle. More and more, we are hearing the testimonies of homosexuals who have trusted Christ and denounced their past ways as nothing more than perversion.

Remember—God created Adam and Eve—not Adam and Harry!

XIX. Infant Baptism

1. Does Acts 16:31,33 Mean Babies Are to Be Baptized?

Question: Does the expression "*and thy house*" in Acts 16:31 and 33 teach that babies are to be baptized for salvation?

Answer: In regard to the phrase,

"...Believe on the Lord Jesus Christ and thou shalt be saved, and thy house,"

...the "house" of course refers to the members of the family who can be saved by believing, exactly the same way as the Philippian Jailer. No babies are mentioned at all, as little babies are unable to comprehend and believe the Gospel. Verse 32 lets us know that ALL of the Jailer's household were old enough to comprehend and believe.

"And they (Paul and Silas) spake unto him (the Jailer) the word of the Lord, and to ALL that were in his house."

Verse 34 informs us that ALL in the Jailer's house did believe.

"And when he had brought them into his house, he (the Jailer) set meat before them, and rejoiced, BELIEVING IN GOD WITH ALL HIS HOUSE."

A. Origin of Infant Baptism:

Where did this damnable doctrine of baptizing infants ever come from? Your Catholic and Lutheran organizations, both, try to convince their parishioners that this is what God's Word teaches. The problem is, nowhere in the Bible can you find one verse that even hints that babies are to be baptized; nor, find that one infant that Paul, the other apostles, or anyone ever baptized!

Should one desire to know the truth about who dreamed up this infant baptismal regeneration, which has deceived millions into eternal damnation; you might go to the Catholic organization for their answer. I would suggest you examine the Catechism of the Catholic Church, p. 319, Paragraph 1252, "Infant Baptism,"

XIX. Infant Baptism

which reads as follows:

"The practice of Infant Baptism is an immemorial TRADITION of the church. There is explicit testimony to this practice from the Second Century on, and it is quite possible, that from the beginning of the apostolic preaching, when whole "households" received baptism, infants may also have been baptized."

In reading their statement, it reveals that infant baptism is a TRADITION; therefore not found anywhere in the Word of God! The words "quite possible" and "may also" show they are grasping at straws to try to give some kind of authority to an unscriptural TRADITION!

"Beware lest any man spoil you through philosophy and vain deceit, after the tradition of men, after the rudiments of the world, and not after Christ." - Colossians 2:8

Note: Above is from the book, *A Biblical Examination Of Baptism*, by the author.

Nowhere in Scripture do we find instruction that babies are to be baptized. This is the invention of man which has become a practice and tradition in some churches. In talking to various pastors, I have asked those who do this if they tell their people that a baby will spend eternity in Hell, unless it is baptized. Of all the pastors I have talked with, not one has ever admitted to telling their people that. All babies and children under the age of accountability automatically go to Heaven if they die.

To say a baby has to be baptized to go to Heaven is a direct attack against the attributes of God, Himself; His love, justice, and veracity, among many. It is inconceivable to the rational mind and God's Word, the Bible, that God would ever send a baby to Hell, when it is incapable of understanding the difference between right and wrong. Only through man's tradition has such a perverted philosophy found it's way into the church. Every individual capable of being responsible for their actions of right and wrong, which includes the ability to understand the consequences of rejecting the Gospel, is under the condemnation

XIX. Infant Baptism

of Almighty God.

***"For all have sinned and come short of the glory of God."-
Romans 3:23***

Since Jesus Christ paid for our sins by His death and Resurrection, He assures everyone that,

"He that believeth on him (Christ) is not condemned; but he that believeth not is condemned already, because he hath not believed in the name of the only begotten Son of God." - John 3:18

XX. Israel

1. *Why Didn't The Israelites Eat the Herds They Had With Them?*

Question: When the Israelites complained to Moses about being in the desert without food and God sent manna and quail, why didn't they eat the meat of the herds that went with them?

Answer: When Israel left Egypt, they had provisions. They had dough and kneading troughs. They had much riches which the Egyptians gave them. The Egyptians just wanted them to go! You can read this in Exodus 12:34-36.

You will find the Israelites complained often! When God took them toward Canaan, He could have taken them a shorter way; but, He knew if they saw the warlike Philistines who inhabited the coast—they would run back to Egypt! (Exodus 13:17,18).

There was no problem about food. God was going to take care of them. He wanted them to learn to depend on Him. He provided them bread in the morning and meat for their evening meal,

"...Behold, I will rain bread from heaven for you; and the people shall go out and gather a certain rate every day, that I may prove them, whether they will walk in my law, or no." - Exodus 16:4

*"...At even ye shall eat flesh, and in the morning ye shall be filled with bread; and ye shall know that I am the LORD your God (12).
...And it came to pass, that at even the quails came up, and covered the camp: ..." - Exodus 16:12, 13*

They even could have bought goods along the way.

"Thou shalt sell me meat for money, that I may eat; and give me water for money, that I may drink: ..." - Deuteronomy 2:28a

The reason they did not eat their flocks and herds: There was not enough for all. (See Numbers 11:21,22). "600,000" footmen times the average family of four means there were approximately 2,400,000 Israelites wandering in the wilderness. If they had eaten all their animals, they would have had no milk, cheese,

XX. Israel

beasts of burden to carry or pull wagons, or breeding stock when they got to Canaan. Joshua 5:12 tells us the manna ceased when they ate of the old corn of the land upon arriving.

We Christians can be sure; since our God sustained 2,400,000 complaining Israelites in the wilderness for 40 years, He can take care of us!

"Casting all your care upon him; for he careth for you." - 1 Peter 5:7

2. When Will There Be Peace in Israel?- Part 1

Question: Does the Bible give any guarantee of a peaceful settlement in Palestine between the Arabs and the Jews?

Answer: This question concerning the problem of the Israeli-Arab conflict has consumed more time in the United Nations and the Security Council than almost any other issue. This is Part One of a continuation of articles on this important subject. "Who owns the land of Palestine? The Jews or the Arabs?" Both "brothers" claim title to the land by virtue of being the sons of Abraham, but having different mothers. They are: Isaac, (father of the nation of Israel) and Ishmael (father of the Arab nations).

God had given the land to Abraham and his seed. We have the record in Genesis 17:7,8,

"And I will establish my covenant between me and thee (Abraham) and THY SEED after thee in their generations for an EVERLASTING COVENANT (7) ...And I will give unto thee, and to THY SEED after thee, the LAND wherein thou art a stranger, ALL THE LAND OF CANAAN, for an EVERLASTING possession, and I will be their God."

In Genesis 15:18 God gives the exact boundaries of this land now called Palestine.

"In the same day the Lord made a covenant with Abram, saying, Unto THY SEED have I given this land, from the river of Egypt unto the great river, the river Euphrates."

It extended from the river of Egypt, northward, for hundreds

XX. Israel

of miles to the River Euphrates. It was bordered on the west by the Mediterranean Sea. It included most of the Sinai Peninsula, the Middle East, Edom, Transjordan, Syria, and generally the areas occupied by the Arabian nations. The entire area covered approximately 255,000 square miles. Israel today occupies only a portion of this land.

There was no problem until Israel moved back into the land, being recognized by the United Nations as a sovereign state in May 14, 1948. There has been trouble and fighting ever since.

3. When Will There Be Peace In Israel? - Part 2

To Whom Did God Give The Land of Canaan?

A long list of prophetic predictions concerning Israel began a little over 4,000 years ago, when God told Abraham in Genesis 17:8,

“And I will give unto thee (Abraham), and to THY SEED after thee...all the land of Canaan (Palestine), for an EVERLASTING possession, and I will be their God.”

God’s covenant was with Abraham and “thy seed;” but, which of “thy children”? Ishmael was the first-born in the family of Abraham. Upon the suggestion of Sarah (Genesis 16:1,2), Ishmael was born of an Egyptian slave woman, named Hagar. It was the custom that the first-born would be the heir to Abraham. After Ishmael was born, God told Abraham that Sarah was going to have a son and Abraham strongly objected and cried out in Genesis 17:18,

“...O that Ishmael might live before thee.”

Ishmael, the father of the Arab nations, was Abraham’s choice, but not God’s.

God’s choice is now revealed unto Abraham in Genesis 17:21,

“But my covenant will I establish WITH ISAAC, which Sarah shall bare unto thee at this set time in the next year.”

XX. Israel

God's word is clear and unmistakable that Ishmael has NO CLAIM to the promised land. For 13 years, or so, Ishmael was Abraham's only son and there was no trouble UNTIL Isaac came along. Then the warfare began. We have the record in Genesis 21:9,10,

“And Sarah saw the son of Hagar the Egyptian (Ishmael), ...mocking (Isaac). (9) Wherefore she (Sarah) said unto Abraham, CAST OUT this bondswoman and her son: for the son (Ishmael)...shall NOT BE HEIR with my son, even with Isaac.”

The matter had come to a head, and Sarah demands Ishmael to be expelled from Abraham's tent. In Genesis 21:11 we have Abraham's reaction,

“And the thing (Sarah's demand) was VERY grievous in Abraham's sight because of his son.”

In Verse 12 God again instructs Abraham concerning who is to be heir of the land,

“...in all that Sarah hath said unto thee, harken unto her voice; FOR IN ISAAC SHALL THY SEED BE CALLED.”

As it was then, so it is now. God gave all the land of Palestine, some 255,000 square miles, only to the nation of Israel (the “seed of Isaac”). The Arabs (the “seed of Ishmael) have no claim to the land whatsoever. As long as both are in the land, there will be no peace, only war.

4. When Will There Be Peace in Israel? - Part 3

A Review of Israel's Past. In Genesis 17:7,8, God had given all the land of Canaan to Abraham and his seed. (Hebrews 11:9). In Genesis 21:12, we find “the seed” would be Isaac (Israel), and not Ishmael (Arabs). Genesis 15:18 gives the boundaries of the land, encompassing approximately 255,000 square miles.

In the process of time, Israel had been in bondage to the Egyptian nation for 430 years. (Exodus 12:40). It was Moses who led them out of Egypt and Joshua who took them into the

XX. Israel

promised land of Canaan. God's warning and instructions to Israel are recorded in Leviticus 26 and Deuteronomy 28.

In Deuteronomy 28:1-14, God promises these blessings if they will obey the Lord. Beginning with Verse 15 to 68, God gives the curses they will bring on themselves, should they disobey the Lord. In Deuteronomy 28:15 we read,

“But it shall come to pass if thou wilt not harken unto the voice of the Lord thy God, to observe to do all his commandments and his statutes which I command thee this day; then ALL THESE CURSES SHALL COME UPON THEE, and overtake thee.”

Notice in Verses 64,65,

“And the Lord shall scatter thee among all people, from one end of the earth even unto the other (64) ...And among these nations shalt thou find no ease, neither shall the sole of thy foot have rest: but the Lord shall give thee there a trembling heart, and failing of eyes, and sorrow of mind: And thy life shall hang in doubt before thee.”(65)

After living in the promised land for over 800 years. God brought judgment upon them because of their sins. In 721 B.C., Assyria took captive the 10 northern tribes, known as Israel. In 606 B.C., the Babylonians, under Nebuchadnezzar invaded the two southern tribes, Judah and Benjamin, taking them captive.

God told Jeremiah to tell the people that the captivity would last 70 years. Jeremiah 25:11 is the record,

“And this whole land shall be a desolation, and an astonishment; and these nations shall serve the king of Babylon seventy years.”

In Jeremiah 29:10, God says He will cause them to return to their land after the captivity of 70 years. There were only about 50,000 Jews that returned. (Ezra 2:64,65). Ezra records the rebuilding of the Temple, and Nehemiah records the rebuilding of the walls and city of Jerusalem. Most of the Jewish people remained scattered throughout the world under the Persian, Grecian, and Roman Empires.

Then in 70 A.D., Titus, the Roman general, finally destroyed

XX. Israel

Jerusalem and the remnant dispersed among the nations of the world. Thus, literally fulfilling Moses' prophecy in Deuteronomy 28.

5. Will There Be Peace In Israel?- Part 4

The answer is "No, not in the dispensation of time we live in today." The Jewish people today occupy less than 5% of the land God gave to Israel. A review of History of the 20th Century will explain the conflict now taking place.

One of the greatest factors in Israel's return was the Balfour Declaration of November 2, 1917. Toward the end of World War I, when the Allies were fighting with their backs to the wall, victory for Germany seemed inevitable. Then a Jewish chemist, named Chaim Weizman, a British subject, offered to his homeland a newly discovered explosive, TNT, the most powerful known to man at this time. It is believed that this turned the tide of the war, resulting in Germany's defeat.

Partly in return for this favor, Lord Balfour proposed that in the event of victory, the land of Palestine be set aside and declared a homeland for Israel. After the war, the Balfour Declaration was signed on November 2, 1917, largely through the influence and suggestion of Chaim Weizman. He later became the first president of the Republic of Israel, from 1921 to 1929. (Encyclopedia Americana, Volume 29).

This declaration greatly increased the tempo of Jewish people immigrating to Palestine. At the conclusion of Britain's Mandate over Palestine, in 1948, Israel was recognized by the United Nations as a sovereign state; but, A BIG MISTAKE was made. It was the dividing of the land of Palestine. The Balfour Declaration had not carried out the full purpose of its original drafters. Instead of giving the land of Palestine as a homeland for Israel, they were only given a PART of the land.

For political reasons; or fear of war between Israel and the Arabs, it was proposed to divide the land between the two. A line

XX. *Israel*

was drawn through Palestine, bisecting Jerusalem, giving part to the Arabs and part to Israel. It was hoped this would pacify both sides. The opposite occurred and has resulted in continual fighting and wars. This has become the “trigger spot” of the world.

It is the “trouble in Abraham’s tent” all over again. Ishmael (the Arabs) and Isaac (the Jews) cannot share the same premises that God gave ONLY to Israel. Putting up a “fence” through the middle of Abraham’s tent could not solve the problem of keeping Isaac (Israel) on one side and Ishmael (the Arabs) on the other.

There will never be peace while the Arabs occupy land that God mandated only to Israel.

6. *Israel’s False Peace And Destruction - Part 5*

Israel will not remain in the land, even after being declared a sovereign nation in 1948. They will be driven out of the land once again and persecuted by the one-world ruler, the Antichrist. Israel in the land today is not the complete fulfillment of any of the Old Testament prophecies concerning Israel. The complete fulfillment of all the hundreds of promises made to Israel will not be accomplished until the Prince of Peace, the Lord Jesus Christ, returns to the Earth and establishes His Kingdom for a thousand years. Then—and only then— will Israel inherit all the land God had promised to them, some 255,000 square miles of real estate. Only then will there be perfect peace throughout the world.

To understand what is prophesied concerning Israel’s future, it is important to know the next prophetic even which will shock the entire world. That event is described as the Rapture, when Jesus Christ comes in the clouds and every Christian is gone from the Earth, “*in a moment, in the twinkling of an eye.*” (1 Corinthians 15:50-52). 1Thessalonians 4:16,17 describes the event,

“For the Lord himself shall descend from heaven with a shout, with the voice of the archangel, and with the Trump of God: and

XX. Israel

the dead in Christ shall rise first: (16) Then we which are ALIVE and remain shall be caught up together with them in the CLOUDS to meet the Lord IN THE AIR: and so shall we ever be with the Lord (17)."

At this point, the world will be in a condition of mass chaos. This event opens the door for a one-world leader (the Antichrist) and the one-world church which God calls,

"Babylon the Great, mother of Harlots and abominations of the earth." - Revelation 17:5

The Antichrist makes a covenant with Israel; but, after three and a half years breaks the covenant (Daniel 9:27); and then seeks to exterminate every Jew. Hitler will seem like a "Sunday school teacher"; although he slaughtered six million Jews, as compared to the Antichrist.

Matthew, Chapter 24, describes this same period of time, known as The 7-Year Tribulation Period. There has never been anything happen on this Earth like what is yet to come. Christ, Himself, states in Verse 21,22,

"For then shall be great tribulation, such as was not since the beginning of the world to this time, no, nor ever shall be.(21) ...And except those days should be shortened, there shall no flesh be saved: but for the elects sake (i.e., the Jews that have received Christ as their Messiah during that time.), those days shall be shortened (22)."

In Palestine, alone, only one-third of the Jewish people will survive. (Zechariah 13:8,9).

7. When Will There Be Peace In Israel - Part 6

God's Promises To Israel Fulfilled

Israel's restoration. Immediately following the Rapture begins the 7-Year Tribulation upon the Earth. This includes Jews and Gentiles. Isaiah, prophesied of Israel that only one out of 10 Jews will survive in Isaiah 6:11,13,

XX. *Israel*

“Then said I (Isaiah), Lord, how long? And he answered, Until the cities be wasted without inhabitant, and the houses without man, and the land be utterly desolate, (11) ...But yet in it shall be a tenth, and it shall return (to Palestine) and shall be eaten; as a teil tree, and as an oak, whose substance is in them, when they cast their leaves, so the holy seed (Jews that are saved) shall be the substance thereof (13).”

Zechariah 13:8,9 lets us know that only one-third in Palestine will survive.

Little did the Jews know, when they told Pilate (referring to Christ), *“His blood be on us and on our children.”* (Matthew 27:25) It has been—for over 2,000 years. The great Diaspora began when Titus, the Roman general, besieged Jerusalem in 70 A.D.; and the Jews were scattered throughout the world. The great historian, Josephus, tells us that over 1,000,000 Jews were killed in this siege alone.

Then, is there any hope for Israel in the future. The answer is “Yes.” After the 7 years of tribulation on the Earth, Christ returns to establish His kingdom and fulfill His promises to Israel. Ezekiel speaks of this in Chapter 36:24,26-28.

“For I will take you from among the heathen, and gather you out of all countries, and will bring you into your own land... (24) A new heart also will I give you, and a new spirit will I put within you:... (26) and cause you to walk in my statutes, and ye shall keep my judgments and do them... (27) And ye shall dwell in the land (Palestine, approximately 255,000 square miles), that I gave to your fathers (28).”

This fulfills Genesis 15:18-21 and 17:7,8.

When Christ returns to establish His kingdom, then and only then, will Israel inherit ALL of her land, along with the peace, protection and prosperity that God has promised her.

“And I will give unto thee, and to thy seed after thee, the land wherein thou art a stranger, all the land of Canaan, for an everlasting possession; and I will be their God.” - Genesis 17:8

8. Will There Be Peace in Israel? - Conclusion

The original question was “Does the Bible give any guarantee of a peaceful settlement in Palestine between the Arabs and the Jews?” which we have considered in the previous six articles. We now consider the future blessings for Israel. Space only permits us to list a few.

1. Israel will never be scattered again. Amos 9:15,

“And I will plant them upon their land, and they shall no more be pulled up out of their land, which I have given them, saith the Lord thy God.”

2. The land will be blessed for Israel. Isaiah 35:1,

“The wilderness and the solitary place shall be glad for them (Israel); and the desert shall rejoice, and blossom as the rose.”

Ezekiel 36:34,35 also describes this blessing,

“And the desolate land shall be tilled (34) ...And they shall say, This land that was desolate is become like the garden of Eden; and the waste and desolate and ruined cities, are become fenced, and are inhabited (35).”

3. Peace at last, not only for Israel, but for the whole world. Micah 4:3 tells us,

“And he (Christ) shall judge among many people, and rebuke strong nations afar off; and they shall beat their swords into plowshares, and their spears into pruninghooks: nation shall not lift up a sword against nation, neither shall they learn war any more.”

4. No more sickness or disease; therefore, no need for emergency wards, hospitals, doctors, etc. Isaiah 35:5,6,

“Then (i.e. during the millennial reign of Christ on this earth), the eyes of the blind shall be opened, and the ears of the deaf shall be unstopped... (5) Then shall the lame man leap as an hart, and the tongue of the dumb sing (6).”

“Dumb” does not mean illiterate, only that one is unable to talk.

5. During the 7 years of tribulation, just prior to the

XX. Israel

millennium, one-fourth of the population will die from the sword, hunger, wild beasts, etc. (Revelation 6:8). But, during the millennium, there will be no ferocious animals to attack mankind. Isaiah 11:6,7 tell us that,

“The wolf also shall dwell with the lamb, and the leopard shall lie down with the kid; and the calf and the young lion and the fatling together; and a little child shall lead them... (6) and the cow and the bear shall feed; their young ones shall lie down together (7).”

The past seven articles are only a skeleton outline of prophecy concerning the nation of Israel and future events as foretold in God’s word. There will be no world peace until Jesus Christ, the Prince of Peace, returns; but, any person can experience peace with the Lord, knowing they will never perish but have everlasting life.

“He that believeth on the Son (Jesus Christ) hath everlasting life: and he that believeth not the Son shall not see life; but the wrath of God abideth on him.”

9. Is Present Israel Back In The Land To Stay?

I. Many know from History that a Jewish chemist, one Chaim Weizman, a British subject, offered to his homeland a newly discovered explosive, TNT. TNT was the most powerful explosive known at that time. Lord Arthur James Balfour proposed that if Germany was defeated, in respect and appreciation for what Chaim Weizman did, that Britain set aside the land of Palestine and declare it a homeland for Israel. The Balfour Declaration was signed on November 17, 1917 .

II. May we apply the order of events of Israel’s Restoration in four stages, as given in Ezekiel 37:7,8; culminating in their recognition by the United Nations as a sovereign state.

1. “So I prophesied as I was commanded: and as I prophesied, there was a noise, and behold a shaking, and the bones came together, bone to his bone.” - Verse 7

Here we can see from the Balfour Declaration in 1917 the

XX. Israel

influx of Jewish men and women by the thousands in re-gathering to their homeland, in the midst of discursiveness and agitation of nations since the Declaration.

2. *“And when I beheld, lo, the sinews and the flesh came up upon them...” - Verse 8a*

This lets us know that new life had come to the Jewish people, as seen in their unfolding progress in industry, agriculture, religious worship, education and etc. They were, therefore, a corporate body of people returning to their homeland by legal enactment.

3. *“...and the skin covered them above...” - Verse 8b*

Therefore, we see the scattered Jews from many countries coming together, as one, a single entity, as unified living organism. This is proof of the blending together and uniting of Jewish colonists and Zionist advocates of all kinds into a recognized state amidst the nations of the world.

The United Nations officially recognized Israel as a sovereign entity. After being scattered throughout the world from 70 A.D. until May 14, 1948, some 1878 years, she is now recognized as a sovereign state. She has an army, an air force, colleges, schools, cozens (priests), currency system, banks, museums, and a Sanhedrin.

4. *“...but there was no breath in them.” - Verse 8c*

Yes, Israel is recognized by the world as a nation; but, she is spiritually dead. She does not have the breath of life in her, spiritually; because she has rejected the Lifegiver, her Messiah, her Savior (Yeshua ha Maschia), the Lord Jesus Christ. Even the Orthodox Jews in Israel today do not adhere to nor claim that Israel today is that of Jehovah God. They are looking for the Messiah, Himself, to establish the true Israel.

One must remember that the complete fulfillment of Ezekiel's prophecies will take place at the conclusion of The Great Tribulation when Christ returns to the Earth and

XX. Israel

establishes His Kingdom for a millennium. Israel that is back in the land now, is only the birth pains of the prophecy. She must be a recognized nation at the Rapture and after, making it possible for the Anti-Christ to confirm a covenant of perpetual peace with her as stated in Daniel 9:27.

“And he shall confirm the covenant with many for one week: and in the midst of the week he shall cause the sacrifice and the oblation to cease, and for the overspreading of abominations he shall make it desolate, even until the consummation, and that determined shall be poured upon the desolate.”

In other words, how could the prophecy in Daniel ever be fulfilled if there were no State of Israel to make a covenant with? Truly we can see God’s handiwork as He controls the nations, like giant chess pieces on a giant chessboard, to fulfill the History He has pre-written. The Israel we see today will again be scattered and persecuted when the Anti-Christ breaks the Covenant he makes with Israel, that lasts only 3 ½ years.

All prophecies concerning Israel, and the nations associated with her, have their completed fulfillment either in the 70th Week of Daniel (The Tribulation Period), or the millennium. The Old Testament prophets knew nothing of the Church Age, known as the Dispensation of Grace (Ephesians 3:2).

When we see the birth pains, now, of the prophecies that are going to give birth in their fulfillment in the Tribulation, and the Millennium; we know that the Rapture is very close! *“He which testifieth these things saith, Surely I come quickly. Amen. Even so, come, Lord Jesus.”* (Revelation 22:20).

5. “And shall (future) put my spirit in you, and ye shall live,...(future)...” - Verse 14a

This will not take place until after the seven years of Tribulation; when Christ returns to establish His earthly Kingdom, and fulfills His covenant to Israel. He will then give them all the land that He had promised to Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob.

XX. Israel

Israel now, as a nation, is dead spiritually. She will remain this way until after the Rapture. Afterwards, she will make a covenant with the Anti-Christ who promises her perpetual peace. After 3 ½ years, Satan's World Council will break that covenant. Then Israel will again be persecuted and scattered, running in fear of their lives as described in Matthew 24:4-22 (Also Mark 13 and Luke 21).

“And Jesus answered and said unto them, Take heed that no man deceive you. (5) For many shall come in my name, saying, I am Christ; and shall deceive many. (6) And ye shall hear of wars and rumours of wars: see that ye be not troubled: for all these things must come to pass, but the end is not yet.

(7) For nation shall rise against nation, and kingdom against kingdom: and there shall be famines, and pestilences, and earthquakes, in divers places. (8) All these are the beginning of sorrows. (9)

Then shall they deliver you up to be afflicted, and shall kill you: and ye shall be hated of all nations for my name's sake. (10) And then shall many be offended, and shall betray one another, and shall hate one another. (11)

And many false prophets shall rise, and shall deceive many. (12) And because iniquity shall abound, the love of many shall wax cold. (13)

But he that shall endure unto the end, the same shall be saved. (14) And this gospel of the kingdom shall be preached in all the world for a witness unto all nations; and then shall the end come (15)

When ye therefore shall see the abomination of desolation, spoken of by Daniel the prophet, stand in the holy place, (whoso readeth, let him understand:) (16)

Then let them which be in Judaea flee into the mountains: (17) Let him which is on the housetop not come down to take any thing out of his house: (18) Neither let him which is in the field return back to take his clothes. (19) And woe unto them that are

XX. Israel

with child, and to them that give suck in those days! (20) But pray ye that your flight be not in the winter, neither on the sabbath day (21)

For then shall be great tribulation, such as was not since the beginning of the world to this time, no, nor ever shall be. (22) And except those days should be shortened, there should no flesh be saved: but for the elect's sake those days shall be shortened."

Hitler's massacre of some 6,000,000 Jews will seem like a "Sunday School picnic" compared to the Anti-Christ's persecution during the Tribulation!

XXI. Jesus Christ

1. *Is Melchisedec Jesus Christ in the Old Testament?*

Hebrews 7:1,3

Question: In Hebrews 7, the Bible says that Melchisedec was priest of the most high God, and he had neither beginning or ending, nor any father or mother. Is Melchisedec Jesus Christ in the Old Testament?

Answer: Let us look at the Scriptures given in your question:

"For this Melchisedec, king of Salem, priest of the most high God, who met Abraham returning from the slaughter of the kings, and blessed him." (1)

"Without father, without mother, without descent, having neither beginning of days, nor end of life; but made like unto (a type of) the Son of God; abideth a priest continually." (3)

In Genesis 14:17-20 we have the actual event that Verse 1 is referring to. The only other place Melchisedec is mentioned in the Old Testament is found in Psalms 110:4, a Messianic Psalm.

"...Thou (Christ) art a priest forever after the order of Melchisedec."

No, Melchisedec was not Christ; BUT, was made "like unto," as Christ did have a father and mother. Therefore, the priesthood of Melchisedec was a type of Christ and His priesthood. Melchisedec's father and mother were not priests before him; nor did he leave any children after him to become priests. His priesthood began and ended with him, just as Christ's priesthood begins and ends with Him.

You might take notice in Hebrew 7:24 where we are told,

"But this man (Christ), because he continueth ever, hath an UNCHANGEABLE priesthood."

The Greek word for "unchangeable" is "aparabatos" and this is the only place it appears in the Greek New Testament. It literally means "untransferrable"; therefore, the priesthood of Christ cannot and will not be changed to, or transferred to, any

XXI. Jesus Christ

other person. There is no priest, or priesthood, that is ordained of God today. This is why in Matthew 27:50,51 it is recorded that,

Jesus, when he had cried again with a loud voice, yielded up the Ghost." (50) And, behold, the veil of the temple was rent in twain, from the top to the bottom... (51)"

The blood which Christ shed, opened a new and living way to God (Hebrews 10:19-25). Therefore, we now have direct access to God through our Lord Jesus Christ, who is our only mediator. This is made perfectly clear in 1 Timothy 2:5.

"For there is one God, and ONE MEDIATOR between God and men, the man Christ Jesus."

2. Was Christ Born In December?

Question: I have been told that it would be impossible for Luke 2:8 to be true, as the shepherds and their flocks could not have been in the fields since it was winter. They say Christ could not have been born at this time. Is this true?

Answer: In 1971 a friend of mine was traveling in the Holy Land. On December 25th the group observed sheep feeding in the fields on grass over a foot high. There was grass from Dan to Beersheba, even to Jericho, with cattle and sheep feeding. This is the time of the "greater rains" which ran from October through December. This is when our Lord was born in an empty stable. (Luke 2:6,7)

In 1 Chronicles 24:1-18, there were 24 priests with two serving each month. Abijah served during the 8th order (1 Chronicles 24:10), which is the 4th month or July. (The first month in the Jewish calendar, Abib, is our April.) Read Luke 1:5, which is the same course found in 1 Chronicles 24. "Abijah" (Hebrew) and "Abiah" (Greek) are the same. Therefore, Zachariah, the father of John the Baptist was serving his term during July.

In Luke 1:23-37 we find Elisabeth conceived in either August or September. Her first month was September or

XXI. Jesus Christ

October. Notice...in Elizabeth's 6th month, February or March, the Virgin Mary conceived. (Luke 1:36). Mary's first month was March or April; therefore, her 9th month would be either November or December. Since the "greater rains" are in December, causing the grass to grow, it is fitting that Luke 2:8 should tell that the shepherds and their sheep were in the fields at the time of Christ's birth.

The middle verse of the Bible is Psalm 118:8 and is so true.

"It is better to trust in the Lord than to put confidence in man."

3. Why Two Accounts for the Nativity?

Question: Why do we have the two accounts of Christ's birth in Matthew and Luke?

Answer: The two accounts are complimentary, not contradictory. Luke gives the birth, and Matthew gives the events which occurred some time later. Our Nativity scenes have caused a lot of confusion by placing so-called "kings" at the stable with the shepherds. In Matthew 2:1,7, the Greek for "wise men" means "oriental astrologer," not kings. In Matthew 2:11 we are told,

"And when they (wise men) were come into the HOUSE, they saw the YOUNG CHILD with Mary his mother, and fell down, and worshipped him (Christ): and when they had opened their treasures, they presented unto him gifts, gold and frankincense, and myrrh."

Notice carefully that the wise men found Christ as a young child, not a baby in the manger as recorded in Luke 2:12,16. Matthew 2:13, 20 also refer to Jesus as a "young child."

Herod's edict in Matthew 2:16 shows us that Christ could have been up to 2 years old when visited by the wise men.

"Then Herod...was exceeding wroth, and sent forth, and slew all the children that were in Bethlehem, and in all the coasts thereof, from two (2) years old and under..."

The star never appeared to the shepherds, as they were

XXI. Jesus Christ

informed by the Angel of the Lord to go to Bethlehem to see the baby, Jesus Christ, Who is the Savior. (Luke 2:8-12).

The star is associated with the wise men. They saw it in the East, where they were from; and knew it was a sign that Christ, the King, had already been born. They went directly to Jerusalem, knowing from the Old Testament prophecies that is where he would rule from. They did not *follow* the star as it did not appear again until after they arrived at Jerusalem.

Herod urged them to go and search in Bethlehem, as Jesus was probably still there. (Matthew 2:7-9). They did not have to search in Bethlehem for Christ, as the star went and stood over the house where he was. Our Christmas scenes and pageantry distort much of what actually took place as recorded in Matthew and Luke.

We do find that the Gospel of Luke illustrates to us salvation as a free gift. The shepherds brought nothing when they came to see Christ.

“But to him that worketh not, but believeth on him (Jesus Christ) that justifieth the ungodly, his FAITH is counted for righteousness.” - Romans 4:5

The Gospel of Matthew illustrates to us what we should do *after* we are saved. Not to *be* saved; but, as our Christian service. Like the wise men, we should bring our gifts, abilities, and talents and present them to the Lord for His use.

“I beseech you therefore, brethren, by the mercies of God, that ye present your bodies a living sacrifice, holy, acceptable unto God, which is your reasonable service.” - Romans 12:1

4. Was Jesus Christ Just a Good Man?

Question: My friend is of a different religion and says that Jesus Christ was a good man, but not God. I have always been taught that Christ was God in human flesh. Can you give me some verses to show him?

Answer: First, if Christ was not God, He would be a sinner,

XXI. Jesus Christ

for "all (humanity) have sinned" (Romans 3:23). He would also be a liar, for He claimed to be God in human flesh. In John 10:30 Christ said;

"I and my father are one."

The Jews were going to stone Him and stated why in John 10: 33,

"...For a good work we stone thee not; but for blasphemy; because that thou, being a man, MAKEST THYSELF God."

In Zechariah, Chapter 12, it is Jehovah speaking in each verse. The word "LORD," denoted by all capital letters in KJT, is "Jehovah." Now, notice in Verse 10,

"...and they shall look upon me (Jehovah) whom they have pierced."

Revelation 1:7 says it is Christ whom they pierced. Yes, God is Christ in human flesh!

"Behold, he cometh with clouds; and every eye shall see him, and they also which pierced him: and all kindreds of the earth shall wail because of him. Even so, Amen."

Exodus 3:14 says

"And God said unto Moses, "I AM THAT I AM...say unto the children of Israel, I AM hath sent me unto you."

Jesus Christ said in John 8:24 that he is the "I AM", therefore, God in human flesh.

"I (Christ) said therefore unto you, that ye shall die in your sins (eternity in Hell): if ye believe not that I AM he, ye shall die in your sins."

There are myriads of proofs in Scripture, but this all that space will allow.

XXI. Jesus Christ

5. "The Sceptre Shall Not Depart From Judah" Means What?

Genesis 49:10

Question: I am confused about what Genesis 49:10 actually means.

Answer: We shall quote the verse in question.

"The sceptre shall not depart from Judah, nor a lawgiver from between his feet, until Shiloh come; and unto him shall the gathering of the people be."

The Hebrew for "sceptre" is "shebet" and signifies a rod or staff. Each tribe of Israel had its own staff, or rod of identity. The literal reading would be, "The tribal identity shall not depart from Judah...until Shiloh come." "Shiloh" means the "bringer of peace." Remember, Judah was the tribe through which Christ was to come. In order to know that Christ was the true Messiah, the tribal identity of Judah had to be in existence. These records were kept in the Temple at Jerusalem.

This Scripture passage, a prophecy, states that these records identifying Judah and his descendents would be in existence until *Shiloh* (Christ) came. About 37 years after Christ, in 70 A.D., Titus, the Roman general, destroyed the Temple and all records therein, and scattered the Jews worldwide.

No Jew, today, knows what tribe he is from, only Jesus Christ. His genealogy is preserved forever in Matthew and Luke. Matthew, Chapter 1, traces the priestly line from Abraham to Christ and Luke, Chapter 3, traces His blood line clear back to Adam. This prophecy is proof that

"He (Christ) came unto his own (Israel), and his own received him not. (11) But as many as received him (Christ), to them gave he power to become the sons of God, even to them that believe on his name." (John 1:11,12)

6. *Why Does the Bible Give 2 Different Genealogies for Christ?*

Question: Why do the genealogies of Jesus, presented in Matthew and Luke, seem to be indicating two different lines that Jesus came through. How do I reconcile the differences?

Answer: All records were destroyed when Titus, the Roman General, destroyed the Temple in Jerusalem in 70 A.D. God recorded the genealogies in Matthew and Luke for documented proof that Jesus Christ is the promised, virgin-born, Messiah; and, rightful heir to the throne of David as King of Kings.

Matthew presents Christ as King (Zechariah 9:9); therefore, a record of His heritage is necessary. Mark presents Christ as Servant (Isaiah 42:1); no genealogy is required for a servant. "Dr. Luke" presents Christ as the Son of Man; therefore, gives the genealogy showing that Christ was God in human flesh (Zechariah 12:10). John presents Christ as Jehovah God. No genealogies are needed as God had no beginning nor end. (Isaiah 9:6).

The Virgin Birth: In Luke 3:31, Nathan was the older son of David (1 Chronicles 3:5) and had a right to the throne. If Christ were the *natural* son of Joseph, He could not have occupied the throne because Joseph descended through Solomon's line, which was set aside by the curse in Jeremiah 22:28-30. But Christ, being the seed of Mary, and through Nathan's line, bypassed the curse); which gave Him the legal right to inherit the throne as the adopted son of Joseph. Therefore, His blood rights came through Mary and His legal rights through Joseph.

1. Only Matthew and Luke record the genealogies of our Savior. Matthew gives the family tree of Joseph, while "Dr. Luke" gives the family tree of Mary. Matthew establishes the rightful KINGSHIP OF CHRIST, going back through King David to the origin of the Jewish nation, Abraham.

2. The Jews accused Joseph and Mary of committing fornication, and said that Jesus Christ was their illegitimate child

XXI. Jesus Christ

(John 8:41). They denied the Virgin Birth of Christ, just as many of your liberal preachers do today.

"He that believeth on the Son hath everlasting life: and he that believeth not the Son shall not see life; but the wrath of God abideth on him." - John 3:36

7. Where Did Christ Go When He Died

Question: Where did Christ go the three days He was dead?

Answer: Upon death, the Lord Jesus separated from His body and was in Paradise for 3 days and 3 nights. Read Luke 16:19-31 and, if you look it up, you will find that the Greek word for *hell* is "Hades." This is where the saved and the lost both went before Christ ascended back to Heaven in Acts 1:11.

Hades was composed of Paradise ("Abraham's Bosom") for the saved, and Torment for the lost. A gigantic gulf separated the two places, so that one could not pass over to the other side. This was located in the center of the Earth as Matthew 12:40 states,

"For as Jonas was three days and three nights in the whale's belly; so shall the Son of Man be three days and three nights in the heart of the earth."

Luke 23:43 lets us know that this is where Christ went upon death. *"And the thief said unto Jesus, Lord, remember me when thou comest into thy kingdom."*

The Lord answered him by saying, *"...Today shalt thou be with me in Paradise."*

After the Lord's Resurrection, He remained on Earth forty days, showing Himself in His resurrected body. When He ascended back to Heaven (Acts 1:11), He emptied Paradise, taking all the saved back with Him to Glory. Ephesians 4:8,9 gives the record,

"Now that he (Christ) ascended, what is it but that he also descended first into the lower parts of the earth...Wherefore he saith, When he ascended up on high, he (Christ) lead captivity captive (those in Paradise to Heaven), and gave gifts unto men."

XXI. Jesus Christ

In 2 Corinthians 12:2-4 we are told that Paradise is now in Heaven.

"And I knew such a man,...(whether in the body, or out of the body, I cannot tell: God knoweth;)...such an one caught up to the third heaven. (2)...How that he was caught up into paradise(4a)."

When a Christian dies today, they go immediately to Paradise to be with the Lord in Heaven. *"We are confident, I say, and willing rather to be absent from the body, and to be present with the Lord."* (2 Corinthians 5:8). At death, the Christian only changes his location. Therefore, leaving his body behind, he (his soul and spirit—the real "you") enters the glories of Heaven!

8. *What Is Jesus' Name?*

Question: Since the letter "J" was not introduced until 500 years ago, is "Jesus" the correct name for the Son of God or have we changed His name?

Answer: "Jesus" is the English word for "iesous," the transliterated Greek version of "Joshua" (English word) ... or "yehowshuwa" or "yehowshua" in the Hebrew. They both mean "Jehovah is salvation or, i.e., is the Savior." Originally, the name "Jehovah" was represented in the Hebrew manuscripts by the tetragrammaton "YHVH." Until the Masoretics put the vowel points in the Hebrew text in 500 A.D., only learned Jews could read and pronounce that.

Since God is cause of the different languages (Genesis 11:6,7), I am sure He understands them all. If English is our mother-tongue, He understands what we say to Him; and the same for any other language.

God caused some 16 different nationalities to understand Peter and the other disciples when they spoke on Pentecost; each understanding in their own known language. Read Acts 2:4-11. These were actual languages which Peter and the disciples spoke as the *"spirit gave utterance"* (Verse 4), and *"everyone heard in their own language"* (Verses 6,8,11). The Holy Spirit, who is

XXI. Jesus Christ

God, on this one special occasion, gave these men the ability to speak so each could hear in their own language.

We have not "changed" God's name, we have simply *translated* it into another language. "Iesous," the transliterated Greek version of "Joshua," existed at the time Jesus walked the Earth in the Septuagint, which is the Old Testament translated into Greek.

By the way, the letter "J" was in existence before 500 A.D. as it is in the Latin alphabet. Just not in the ancient Greek or Hebrew alphabet.

"Neither is there salvation in any other: for there is none other name under heaven given among men, whereby we must be saved." - Acts 4:12

XXII. Other Books By Author

THE TRUTH ABOUT EVOLUTION OR; DON'T LET SATAN MAKE A MONKEY OUT OF YOU! This book defends Creation vs. Evolution and refutes the False Philosophy and Theory of a Young Earth. Perfect Bound, 248 pages, index to pages outlines all topics covered, indicating location of diagrams and illustrations. The suggested donation is \$8.00.

MARTIN LUTHER, MASTER OF DECEIT - Perfect Bound 5-1/2 x 8-1/2, 277 pages with Scripture Index, Available for a donation of \$8.00. Luther did not believe God's Ten Commandments and eliminated the Second one in his Catechisms. Luther absolutely did not believe that salvation was by faith in Christ alone. Each verse Luther uses is examined in detail in this book. You will cringe at what Luther has to say about the Jewish people.

A BIBLICAL EXAMINATION OF HELL - This book has 7 color diagrams, coded to the text. Perfect Bound 88 pages, 8-1/2" x 11." The suggested donation is \$9.00 requests. A Bible study companion, the charts and comments help clarify much misunderstanding concerning the subject of Hell.

FACE TO FACE WITH TONGUES - Perfect Bound, 5-1/2 x 8-1/2, 123 pages, the suggested donation is \$7.00. A verse by verse examination of all the Scriptures concerning the "speaking in tongues," leading to the conclusion this is not for the Church today. Tongues ceased with the completion of God's word, in about 96 A.D.

A BIBLICAL EXAMINATION OF BAPTISM - Perfect Bound (Paper-back) 5-1/2 x 8-1/2, 88 Pages, suggested donation is \$7.00. Covers all the Scriptures about baptism in the New Testament with thorough exegesis as to what baptism really is and what it isn't! This book scripturally refutes infant baptism. Explains the different baptisms taught in the Bible and their purpose

SALVATION & THE PUBLIC INVITATION - Perfect

XXII. Other Books By Author

Bound (Paper-back), 5-1/2" x 8-1/2", 128 Pages, the suggested donation is \$7.00. This book challenges a long held tradition of many churches. Do you have to walk to the front of a church to be saved; or, is it just another tradition that has crept into the church This book will challenge you to cast aside preconceived ideas and search the Scripture for yourself.

NOT CHOSEN TO SALVATION - Perfect Bound (Paper-back) 5-1/2 x 8-1/2, 196 Pages, suggested donation is \$8.00. This book is a refutation of David Nettleton's book, Chosen To Salvation. It covers all the Scriptures relating to the false doctrine of predestination for salvation, providing the reader with tools for witnessing. This evil doctrine and is nothing less than an attack on the Grace of God. Scripture Index in the back.

THREE IMPORTANT QUESTIONS - Perfect Bound (Paper-back) 5-1/2 x 8-1/2, 98 pages. The suggested donation is \$7.00.

Question One: When Did Christ Rise From The Grave?
This chapter has two diagrams, refuting the fallacies of Good Friday and Easter Sunday.

Question Two: Is God Unfair To The Heathen?

Question Three: Are We To Worship On Saturday?

How to Order Books

The Suggested Donations Are For Shipping and Cost Only!
Please send your check or money order and your book list to:

Heritage Baptist Bible Church
Attn: Internet Book Order
P.O. Box 573
Walnut Grove, MN 56180

XXIII. About The Author

Dr. Younce has been in the ministry 40 years, having been ordained in 1970. He is a graduate of Florida Bible College and holds a Doctorate in Theology. He has pastored churches in Ohio, Indiana, Florida, and Minnesota. He is the founding pastor of Heritage Bible Church in Ohio and Heritage Baptist Bible Church in Walnut Grove, Minnesota. He and his wife, Marge, have made Walnut Grove their home since 1991.

Dr. Younce's ministry has always been motivated by a caring evangelistic outreach. Thirty-six years of radio and recently television, bear this out. Teaching is another characteristic of Dr. Younce's ministry. This is evidenced by the many Bible Institute courses he has taught over the years.

Dr. Younce's style of writing is Bible-centered, direct, and inspiring. He "pulls no punches" to tickle the ears. He believes now, more than ever, people need to know what the Bible says...and they need not to be deceived by the "vain traditions of men!"